





# EVIL EMPEROR'S WILD CONSORT

BOOK 08

*Xiao Qi Ye*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Evil Emperor's Wild Consort

(废柴要逆天：魔帝狂妃)

by

Xiao Qi Ye

(萧七爷)

# Synopsis

---

She has come a long way.

Orphaned, born a weakling, and being the infamous good-for-nothing of Azure Dragon Country. Gu Ruoyun was the shame of the proud Gu household. Falsely accused of a crime she did not commit, she was betrayed by her family and beaten to death by her own grandfather. But life took a fateful twist on that very day — she was revived.

Newly awakened, she is now the Master of an ancient treasure that resides within her body. Precious cultivation pills, treasures beyond her wildest imagination and spiritual beasts, all within her grasp... She is the apple of the eye of all under the heavens, including that of a mysterious, handsome man.

Now she only has one goal — to conquer the world.

# Acknowledgement

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

## Chapter 701: Depart, Kill (2)

---

Her voice was fresh and calm like the wind; it was hard to not believe her every word.

The Sect Master narrowed his eyes slightly and fell silent.

Actually, he had other reasons for asking Gu Ruoyun to join the Spirit Sect.

Three Great Authorities may seem to be bound together for good or ill on the surface but not many people know of their internal disputes. While the Immortal Realm is at loggerheads with Gu Ruoyun which means that this woman would never join them, he still had to fear the Courts of Hell!

If she were to join the Courts of Hell, from then on, the Spirit Sect's power would become weaker than the Courts of Hell!

This was why he had decided to do this today.

However, he had forgotten that Gu Shengxiao was her older brother! As long as Gu Shengxiao was around, Gu Ruoyun would never agree to help the Courts of Hell to threaten the Spirit Sect!

Furthermore, he believed her when she said that if she truly wishes to leave, no one here could stop her.

As such, would that be provoking an unstoppable future enemy of the Spirit Sect or keeping another ally?

"I wonder if there's anything else, Sect Master? If not, then I'll take my leave."

Gu Ruoyun knew that her words have entered his head when she observed the Sect Master deep in his thoughts.

Actually, if it wasn't for the Honorable Sir Tianqi and my older brother, I would never have bothered to spout such rubbish! With my current level of power, I no longer need to fear the Three Great Authorities.

"Sect Master!"

Realizing that Gu Ruoyun was about to leave, a few elders grew nervous and tried to say something. However, the Sect Master simply raised his hand and stopped them. His cold voice rang aloud, "Let her go."

Gu Ruoyun said nothing more and turned to leave the meeting room. Initially, the Honorable Sir Tianqi was about to follow suit but after a bit of thought, he decided to stay.

"Sect Master, you've crossed the line today!" The Honorable Sir Tianqi was usually very respectful towards the Sect Master but now, he could not help but react with anger. He spoke with a furious look on his face, "The Gu girl has been a big help to the Spirit Sect and yet she has never asked for any remuneration. Now, you had tried to force her to join the Spirit Sect! It's a good thing you had decided against it. Otherwise, Gu Shengxiao and I will no longer stay with the Spirit Sect."

It probably wouldn't matter so much if Gu Ruoyun was somebody else but this girl is my little sister's only maternal granddaughter and she looks so much like her mother. If my sister finds out that something has happened to this girl, she would storm the Spirit Sect immediately and take her revenge.

When that time comes, I will certainly stand with my sister.

There's no need to even mention Gu Shengxiao. That guy had been raising his power with the ambition to take over the Spirit Sect all for the sake of this little girl. If the family whom he had dedicated himself to protect ended up getting hurt in his own organization, knowing that kid, he would definitely fly off the handle!

"The Honorable Sir Tianqi, are you threatening me?" The Sect Master was already angry enough. Yet this damned old man can't seem to make sense of the situation and has dared to threaten me?

Does he really think that I won't punish him?

The Honorable Sir Tianqi rolled his eyes. Suddenly, he laughed, "I forgot to tell you that the girl said that she wants to pass on all her knowledge in pill refinement to me. I now know how to refine pills."

"You..."

The Sect Master was so incensed that his face turned ashen.

What does this mainland lack most of all?

Pill masters!

Because right now, on this mainland, not a single pill master had remained in existence.

If he were to anger this old man, perhaps he might run to the Courts of Hell immediately. The Spirit Sect would then lose more than an elder.



## Chapter 702: Depart, Kill (3)

---

Perhaps this old man knows his own worth as well, that's why he dares to threaten me!

The Sect Master forced himself to calm the rage within his heart and rose to his feet. He then straightened his sleeves and walked away.

He did not bother giving the Honorable Sir Tianqi a second look as he left.

"The Honorable Sir Tianqi, you've learned how to refine pills? Congratulations."

Seeing that the Sect Master has finally left, the elders who could no longer contain themselves immediately rose from their seats and hurriedly surrounded the Honorable Sir Tianqi. Their faces were filled with smiles of adoration.

"Hehe."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi chuckled dryly and felt a little guilty. After all, he has only just scratched the surface of pill refinement and was still unable to refine pills completely. He excused himself and broke away from the circle with his entire body drenched in cold sweat.

"Damn it, humans really shouldn't brag. It seems that I'm going to have to shut myself in from now on, never to emerge until I've successfully refined a pill. Those old farts might start latching on to me. If the cat gets out of the bag, I would be finished."

As he spoke, he wiped the sweat off his brow guiltily and hurriedly walked towards Gu Ruoyun.

He saw her delicate and pretty figure from afar. The Honorable Sir Tianqi's eyes shone as he picked up the pace and approached her.

"What? You're out so soon?" Gu Ruoyun clearly noticed the Honorable Sir Tianqi approaching and raised her eyebrow, "Did the Sect Master cause trouble for you?"

"I'm now the only person aside from you who knows the art of pill refinement. How would he dare to cause trouble for me?" The Honorable Sir Tianqi looked as if he was rejoicing in the misfortune of others, "By the way, little girl, is there any way for me to quickly pick up on pill refinement?"

"Nope."

Gu Ruoyun mercilessly rejected him, "I've given you all the tools you need. You only need to practice a little more and control the fire level. Besides, if you happen to pick up any other pill formulas, you can try refining those pills as well. I can be on my way now."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi was stunned as he asked, "You won't wait for Gu Shengxiao to come out?"

"No," Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "I have another matter to attend to so I must be on my way. Great Uncle, when my big brother comes out, have him look for me at the Dongfang family home. I'll be waiting for him there."

Just a while ago, a Dongfang family member had sent a message stating that something had happened to the Xia family and asked her to pay them a visit.

Regardless, the Xia family are Yu'er's only family in this lifetime, I cannot sit idly by.

"Alright."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi smiled, "Little girl, if there's something you need to take care of, I will give the message to Shengxiao. I'll escort you down the mountain now."

"There's no need," Gu Ruoyun looked at the Honorable Sir Tianqi and shook her head, "I can leave on my own. Take care, Great Uncle. I hope that when we meet again, you'll be refining pills

successfully."

She then turned into a flash of green light and charged down the mountain.

At this moment, she did not notice a malicious figure hiding in the corner. A pair of vicious eyes filled with murderous light stared at the departing figure.

"Gu Ruoyun! You've finally left the Spirit Sect. It's certainly no loss for the members of the Immortal Realm who've been waiting for you outside the Spirit Sect for such a long time! Now, I can finally have my revenge. Don't worry, Shi'er, I'm going to watch how she dies! This is the price she'll pay for killing you!"

My Shi'er was so kind and perfect, like a fairy. This woman viciously had her murdered, she clearly deserves to die!

Anyone who kills a fairy is a demon!

...

If one wishes to head back to the world after leaving the Spirit Sect, one must first pass through a mountain peak fraught with peril.

## Chapter 703: Depart, Kill (4)

---

At this moment, at the peak of a mountain, the young woman who was soaring through the air immediately stopped in her tracks. Her clear, cold gaze swept towards the brushing trees.

"You've been following me for such a long time, isn't it about time for you to come out?"

Whoosh!

Instantly, over ten figures appeared from thin air before Gu Ruoyun's eyes.

As she stared at the dignified-looking elders dressed in white, Gu Ruoyun crossed her hands over her chest as her lips curled into a shallow smile, "The Immortal Realm certainly has a lot of Martial Honors on hand. After killing so many of them, there's still quite a few more of you! I wonder how your underlings were nurtured? I'm afraid that not even the other two Great Authorities know how many Martial Honors the Immortal Realm actually has!"

Previously, during the Divine Trials, Qianbei Ye had killed off countless Martial Honors. Gu Ruoyun never expected that they would still be so many Martial Honors left in the Immortal Sect!

Gu Ruoyun was suddenly very curious. What has the Immortal Realm been using to nurture so many Martial Honors?

Besides... The aura of these people feels quite unstable. It almost seems like they had utilized some external factor in order to break through.

"Hmph, that's none of your business."

The leading white-robed elder seems like a mid-level Martial Honor. He scoffed coldly and stared emotionlessly down at Gu Ruoyun, "Damned girl, your vicious acts are hated by both man and god. Today, the Immortal Realm shall enforce justice in the name of the heavens and wipe you, this disaster of a human, off

the face of this earth!"

"It looks to me that the Immortal Realm is still hanging on to this sanctimonious facade." Gu Ruoyun's lips lifted into a shallow smile as she gazing at the members of the Immortal Realm, "If you want my life for the sake of your own private ends, you should just say it straight away. Why make so many excuses? Immortal Realm? Hehe. I reckon that the people I've killed are only a small scrap of the Immortal Realm."

"Impudence!"

The elder's face sank and he retorted with sharp righteousness, "Demon woman, do not insult me! The Immortal Realm holds an upright existence on this mainland! The sins you've committed have angered the heavens as well so the heavens have permitted the Immortal Realm to destroy you!"

Boom!

In that instant, every member of the Immortal Realm emitted a strong aura from their bodies and directed all of it towards Gu Ruoyun.

To them, it does not matter if this demon woman was now at the rank of a Martial Honor. There were so many of them that their combined coercion should crush her alive!

How could one tiny ant go up against so many elephants?

That was simply too outrageous!

In their hearts, Gu Ruoyun was a tiny, weak ant. She could not possibly be a match for them.

Gu Ruoyun smiled gently. Her clear, cold eyes were still and calm.

Then...

She gently moved her lips and said, "Mei Xue, Mo Liyou, Hei Bao, and... Master Murong. I'll leave the rest to you."

Once she spoke, she moved to the side in a flash and simply found a tree to sit herself down so she could watch the scene before her contentedly.

The members of the Immortal Realm were stunned, unsure of what was going on.

In the face of so many powerful people before her, she still has the mood to relax and watch the show?

Boom!

However, at that moment, a few people suddenly appeared from thin air and stood before the members of the Immortal Realm.

Due to the fact that Xiao Hei contains an extremely dense amount of spiritual energy which was highly suitable for cultivation and the fact that time moved quicker inside Xiao Hei, in contrast to the world outside, everyone has managed to make significant breakthroughs. Especially Master Murong, who had pretty much charged towards the rank of a low-level Martial Honor!

Gu Ruoyun did not wish to fight for two reasons. One, she wanted to let them flex their muscles and two, these people have used external means to break through to the rank of a Martial Honor. They were a far cry from the true Martial Honors like Mei Xue and the others!

"Lord Governor, don't worry. Leave these guys to us."

## Chapter 704: Depart, Kill (5)

---

Mei Xue smiled seductively. Even though she had been unable to reach the rank of a mid-level Martial Honor during her cultivation in Xiao Hei, she has risen in battle prowess considerably. Now, these low-level Martial Honors were no match for her.

She was already a formidable adversary for a mid-level Martial Honor, able to hold her own for about ten techniques or more.

Of course, if the opposition has an unstable aura like the ones before her, she could definitely defeat a mid-level Martial Honor!

"You're looking for death!"

The elder who had projected the aura of a mid-level Martial Honor changed his expression greatly and charged towards Mei Xue, ready to attack.

However, he was soon in for a shock because the woman before him was simply too fast! She was so fast that he could not even see her. Was this the speed of a low-level Martial Honor?

"Impossible. This... is impossible!"

Behind a large tree not too far away, Kun Nan witnessed the scene and staggered back in shock.

His face has turned pale and he looked overwhelmed as if he dared not believe what he had just seen.

"Why does she have so many Martial Honors under her thumb? Furthermore, how could they hold their own against ten of the most powerful cultivators in the Immortal Realm?"

This can't be real!

Gu Ruoyun has no background and even with her strong abilities, she was only a low-level Martial Honor. What capabilities does she have to be able to recruit four powerful low-level Martial Honors?

Especially that beautiful yet sickly wheelchair-bound man.

Without even standing up, every enemy who comes near him would be hit by an unknown attack and immediately fall to the ground...

It was abnormal!

These guys are totally abnormal!

In his shock and panic, Kun Nan exposed his aura. The wheelchair-bound man sensed his presence and turned towards his hiding spot...

He covered his nose in shock and tried to run away. At this very moment, he only had one thought, that was to leave this place!

Forget about vengeance, I don't need it anymore!

I only want to run away and never see these abnormal weirdos again!

Whoosh!

As he realized that Kun Nan was trying to run away, Mo Liyou shot a silver light from the palm of his hand which landed, of all things, on his thigh. Kun Nan fell stiffly onto the ground and when he tried to get up, he realized that his limbs would not cooperate with him at all.

Slowly, the fear in his eyes increased. He was now truly regretting his actions in going against Gu Ruoyun.

Of course, Gu Ruoyun did not seem to notice any of this. She continued to lounge contentedly on the tree. There was a smile in her clear, cold eyes as she witnessed the ongoing battle.

"Mei Xue, the four of you, I want you to resolve this battle quickly."

Suddenly, Mei Xue and the rest heard Gu Ruoyun's voice mid-fight and turned around. Four weapons were then flung towards them.

Next came the woman's clear and serene voice, "Contract."



"This..."

The four of them were stunned as they stared in astonishment at the weapons in their hands. The clear spiritual energy rushed into their hearts, clearing their minds.

Spiritual weapons!

These are actually spiritual weapons!

Furthermore, her words mean that she has decided to gift these to us!

Mei Xue and the rest hurriedly suppressed their excitement and shock. They swiftly drew a contract with the spiritual weapons before rejoining the battle once again.

Even though the members of the Immortal Realm had forcibly raised their level of strength, due to their great numbers, fighting them still required quite a bit of stamina. Now, with the spiritual weapons on hand, they moved like fish in water as they cut down one enemy after another.

Gu Ruoyun had her reasons for gifting those spiritual weapons as well.

In the past, she would never have shown them these spiritual weapons. However, once a human enters Xiao Hei, they would become restricted by Xiao Hei. Those restrictions would not appear to be very obvious except when a person has a traitorous heart. Xiao Hei would be able to detect that immediately.

# Chapter 705: Lingxiao's Return (1)

---

As such, with restrictions like these in place, she felt safe in granting them these spiritual gifts.

Except...

Gu Ruoyun gently narrowed her eyes as her gaze fell upon the wheelchair-bound Mo Liyou. A pondering look appeared in her eyes.

If what I've sensed from Xiao Hei is true, then Mo Liyou is actually...

However, regardless of his identity, he can't harm me now so it has nothing to do with me!

Soon, the entire grassland was drenched in blood. The members of the Immortal Realm who had been hooting and hollering now lay on the ground, silenced. Once all the strong cultivators of the Immortal Realm has been killed, Gu Ruoyun finally turned her gaze towards the panicking Kun Nan.

Her expression looked as serene as always but it was this particular calm from within her which terrified Kun Nan to the bone. He tried to get up but lacked the strength, he could only stare with eyes wide open at the woman who was approaching him.

"Kun Nan, when we met last time, I had left you with your life. I never expected you to serve yourself up on a plate. Do you remember what I had said the back then? You once dared to lay your hands on my older brother so I'm going to make you pay!"

Xia Linyu is my kin.

Gu Shengxiao is my big brother in this lifetime and is someone who would protect me with his life.

I won't allow anyone to scheme against him!

If anybody dares to do so, they shall be destroyed!

"What do you want to do? Gu Ruoyun, you already have the Immortal Realm as your enemy. If you dare to harm me, my master and the entire Spirit Sect would never let you get away with it!" Kun Nan screamed as his face completely distorted out of fear, he looked extremely malevolent.

Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly and her eyes were clear, cold and calm, "So what?"

Yes, so what?

I was not just about Kun Nan. If the entire Spirit Sect were to harbor ill intentions towards Gu Shengxiao, she would not mind destroying the entire Spirit Sect.

"Lady Gu, let's talk about this, alright?" Kun Nan had wet himself in his extreme fear as his entire being trembled.

Just because he had been boasting about taking revenge for Shi Yun does not mean that he was willing to give up his life for it! Now that it has come to a life-threatening point, all thoughts of hatred and vengeance have now been thrown to the back of his mind.

He only wants to live!

"See how young you are. Why would you take things so hard and go against the Spirit Sect? If you let me go, I'll never hold a grudge against you nor would I cause you any more trouble. I beg you, let me go."

These words were not false.

Kun Nan was now so scared out of his wits that if someone was to ask him to send more people after Gu Ruoyun, he would not dare to do so even if he had been given a hundred glasses of liquid courage.

Gu Ruoyun folded her arms across her chest as she stared at Kun

Nan's increasing panic attack with a smile that did not reach her eyes.

"It's all my master's fault. It was my master, the Honorable Sir Lingshang, who had asked me to do it. If you want vengeance, look for him instead. I'm innocent, he had forced me into this. Lady Gu, please let me off, I really don't want to die."

Kun Nan threw himself to the ground and shuffled two steps forward on his knees. His hands clutched the corner of Gu Ruoyun's robe as he tugged on it with teary eyes, begging for mercy.

Boom!

Suddenly, a powerful flame erupted from Gu Ruoyun's body and threw Kun Nan out of the way. A suffocating aura then enveloped the skies. At that moment, Kun Nan felt as if a large hand had wrapped itself around his neck, making it hard for him to breathe.

"Get your filthy hands away, don't touch her!"

The man's eerie voice slammed into Kun Nan's chest, causing his throat to close up. He spat out a mouthful of blood.

Gu Ruoyun's expression slowly softened at the sound of that voice. She turned around and saw the silver-haired man. She smiled at him as she asked, "Xiao Ye, why have you come out?"

## Chapter 706: Lingxiao's Return (2)

---

"If I had not come out, that guy would have just held on to your robe and not let go." Qianbei Ye frowned and swept his gaze towards the corner of her robe. He said pitifully, "Get rid of this robe."

"Alright," Gu Ruoyun smiled gently, "I'll go and change later."

Hearing this, Qianbei Ye's expression softened and his lips curled into a devastating smile. However, his smile disappeared as soon as he turned to the pale-looking Kun Nan on the floor. A powerful aura would burst forth and smashed against Kun Nan once again.

So powerful!

Kun Nan was shocked and he stared in surprise at the man before him.

I've felt the Sect Master's coercion before but this man's aura is much more powerful than the Sect Master's...

The Sect Master is also a high-level Martial Honor! If he's stronger than the Sect Master, could it be that he's...

A Martial Supreme!

When the two words appeared in his mind's eye, Kun Nan began to tremble all over.

It's all Master's fault. If it wasn't for his schemes, I would never have fallen into such a dangerous situation!

It's all his fault!

Kun Nan gnashed his teeth hatefully, completely forgetting that it was he who had dragged his master down with him because of Shi Yun. He was also the one who had embarrassed himself in public and wanted to use every possible means to exact revenge.

His poor master, the Honorable Sir Lingshang, had always put his disciple's best interest at heart. It was also because of his

disciple that he now carries a grudge against Gu Ruoyun.

Nevertheless, even after doing so much for him, he had become the most hated person in Kun Nan's heart.

If he ever finds out about this, he would probably be angered to death!

Boom!

Qianbei Ye increased the intensity of his aura. At that moment, Kun Nan could clearly hear cracking sounds coming from the bones in his body. Then, he felt the weight of a great mountain pressing on him, making it hard for him to breathe.

An extremely powerful cultivator's coercion could even kill his target outright!

This was something his master had mentioned to him before but he had never believed it. Now he knows that there was such a person in the world who could crush someone to death simply with their aura alone.

Slowly, Kun Nan's body became numb and blood began to shoot out from within, drenching his entire body. If some unknowing soul were to pass by, they would certainly feel extremely shaken.

There was nothing pressed against Kun Nan yet he was slowing being squashed into a hamburger patty. It was a particularly nauseating sight.

"Yun'er, let's go."

Qianbei Ye turned away and no longer bothered to look at hamburger patty Kun Nan. His eyes, which had been drenched with murderous intent, immediately softened when they landed on Gu Ruoyun. He smiled as beautifully as a flower and looked so mesmerizing that he seemed out of this world.

"Yun'er, are you angry?"

When he noticed that Gu Ruoyun had not responded, the smile

on Qianbei Ye's face gradually disappeared. He spoke pitifully, "Who asked him to pull on your robe?"

Mei Xue and the others who were shocked by Qianbei Ye's quick change in demeanor could not help but twitch their lips when they heard this.

This man had killed Kun Nan just because he had pulled on her robe?

When it comes to Qianbei Ye's temper, Gu Ruoyun knew him like the back of her hand.

After knowing him for so many years, as soon as someone lay their hands on a single hair on her head, this man would immediately go on a killing spree without another word! Of course, he would only retaliate in this manner if those people were her enemies! For others such as Zuo Shangchen, Zixie... And that child Ye Nuo, regardless of how much Qianbei Ye hated having them by her side, he would not really hurt them.

"Xiao Ye," Gu Ruoyun recomposed her thoughts and asked, "Has your body fully recovered?"

## Chapter 707: Lingxiao's Return (3)

---

"Actually, my body is not much of a hindrance to me." When he saw that Gu Ruoyun was not angry with him, Qianbei Ye heaved a sigh of relief and said, "Ah, right. Didn't you want to visit the Xia family in Heaven City? I'll accompany you there."

Gu Ruoyun had only just put Mei Xue and the others back into Xiao Hei when she heard the man's voice from above. She was stunned but before she could react, a hand had reached out and wrapped itself around her waist. Before she knew it, they were flying into the air.

Then...

When Gu Ruoyun regained her senses, she realized that she was now right in front of the Xia family home!

That's correct. In the blink of an eye, she was already in Heaven City, at the Xia family home!

Gu Ruoyun was shocked. She blinked and stared at the man's peerless face in complete surprise, "Xiao Ye, what's your level of strength now?"

"Yun'er," Qianbei Ye smiled, "I've just learned a special technique, I can now carry you for a thousand kilometers very quickly. I was not able to do it in the past but ever since my recent awakening, I've been able to fly so much faster now. Next time, no matter where you want to go, I can reach you immediately. This way, if you're ever in any danger, I can save you in the fastest way possible."

Whenever he recalled the events which had happened during the Divine Trials, Qianbei Ye's heart would clench.

If I had only been a little faster, she would not have had to suffer such heavy injuries!

An eerie light flashed in Qianbei Ye's eyes and his peerless



expression was filled with resolve. Nevertheless, whenever he looks at the woman in his arms, the icy chill would melt away, replaced by a sense of warmth.

Yun'er, I've finally found you again after searching for so long.

Hence, in this lifetime, I will protect you with my life!

"Gu girl, you're finally here."

Just then, an elderly figure appeared in the doorway.

A pained look appeared in Gu Ruoyun's eyes when she saw the elder, "Master Xia, long time no see. I wonder, do you have any news of Xia Linyu?"

Master Xia shook his head bitterly and sighed, "A while ago, I heard someone mention that they had seen someone who looked just like him. However, that person then killed a lot of strong cultivators from the Immortal Realm. How could Yu'er have that level of power? It must have been a mistake."

Gu Ruoyun fell silent before she spoke again, "Master Xia, if there's no news, then it's also good news. If Yu'er is still alive, he'll definitely return."

"That's true."

Master Xia sighed and smiled bitterly.

These past years have clearly aged him. His grey hair was vast and hazy, it was a heartbreaking sight.

"By the way, Master Xia, why had you summoned me?" Gu Ruoyun asked puzzledly.

From my observation, the Xia family does not seem to be in danger. Why had Master Xia summoned me?

"Gu girl, something has happened to Lord Lingxiao!"

Lingxiao!

Gu Ruoyun's expression changed immediately and her eyes sank,

"What has happened to the Black Tortoise?"

Lingxiao was an important friend of the Azure Dragon and the White Tiger. Furthermore, she had agreed to help Lingxiao. She had not anticipated that something would have happened to him.

If something bad has happened to him, I would never forgive myself!

"Lord Lingxiao... It seems that he can't go on any longer."

Master Xia's entire face was filled with sorrow and bitterness, "So I sent word to the Dongfang family to ask you to come here. Perhaps you might have a way to release Lord Lingxiao."

Gu Ruoyun pondered for a moment before raising her head to face Master Xia, "Take me to Lingxiao!"

## Chapter 708: Lingxiao's Return (4)

---

"Alright. Gu girl, follow me."

Master Xia glanced at Gu Ruoyun and sighed again. He then turned around and led the way to the underground chamber.

At this moment in the underground chamber, a pale-looking old man was lying curled up on the ground. He looked as if he was suffering immensely and was under some form of torture.

The old man opened his tired eyes. He seemed to have sensed their footsteps from far away. He turned towards the figure in green approaching him and tried to speak but could only whisper weakly, "You're here..."

"Lingxiao, what on earth happened? The Longevity Pill should have helped to support you for another ten years. Why have you become this way so suddenly?"

Furthermore, in order to prevent Lingxiao from enduring any more torture, I had placed a stand-in as well. What's happened to him?

Lingxiao smiled bitterly, "It seems that I can't go on any longer. It's a good thing that you're here so that I can see my friends one last time. Will you let me see the White Tiger and the Azure Dragon? Unfortunately, I still haven't seen the Vermillion Bird. Between the four of us, the Vermillion Bird is the one with the purest mind and would easily fall for the lies of others. I really can't stop worrying..."

Just as he was speaking, two figures rushed out from Gu Ruoyun's body.

"Lingxiao, what has happened to you?" Yunyao's entire face was filled with anxiety. Her eyes were full of concern and worry as she asked, "You were alright not too long ago, how had this happened all of a sudden?"

The Azure Dragon, Tianqiong, did not speak. His handsome face was lost in deep thought as his profound eyes observed Lingxiao. His thoughts were unreadable.

"Please step aside."

Gu Ruoyun calmly requested.

Hearing this, Yunyao and Tianqiong made a pathway, allowing the woman to approach Lingxiao's side.

"I initially intended to wait for Zixie to come back to life before helping you break the seal. Now, it seems that I have no other way. I can only try."

Yunyao's eyes shone as she asked, "Master, can you save Lingxiao?"

Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "I'm not a hundred percent certain. Truthfully speaking, I'm not even fifty percent certain!"

It's true, this was the least certain Gu Ruoyun has ever been yet it was also something that she absolutely must do.

Yunyao felt anxious. She knew that since Gu Ruoyun has said it, that proves that she was completely uncertain of whether she could break Lingxiao out of this formation.

"I want all of you to wait outside first. I need to be here alone. Master Xia, remember, before Lingxiao and I emerge, you mustn't let anyone inside. Otherwise, not only would I fail in breaking this formation, both Lingxiao and I will lose our lives."

The woman slowly raised her head, her clear and cold eyes looked extremely grave.

Having followed Gu Ruoyun for such a long time, this was the first time Yunyao had ever seen Gu Ruoyun look like that. Even when faced with countless life-threatening dangers, she has never looked this grim.

Could it be... That saving Lingxiao is really that difficult?

Her heart clenched at the thought of this. She wanted to speak but was stopped by Tianqiong.

"Yun Yao, let's go." Tianqiong frowned and turned to the woman in green before them. His lips moved a little, "You must watch out for your own safety. If you're faced with something you can't do, don't force it. The Four Divine Beasts owe you quite enough."

He then held Yun Yao's hand and walked out the door.

"I'll stay with you."

Qianbei Ye's eyes fell upon the girl's lucid and elegant face. An unknown light flashed in his peerless features, "I'm worried about you."

Hearing this, Gu Ruoyun nodded and smiled gently, "Alright."

## Chapter 709: Lingxiao's Return (5)

---

Very soon, aside from Qianbei Ye, the rest of them had left the stone chamber. Everything was now silent.

Lingxiao laughed bitterly, "If you really can't do it, just give up on me, my death won't be regretted. You are the Azure Dragon and White Dragon's savior. I won't drag you down with me."

Gu Ruoyun did not speak but her clear, cold eyes flashed with determination. She slowly walked towards Lingxiao. At that moment, she let out all of the coercion from her body, turning it into a hurricane with spiraled around her surroundings.

Her hair danced in the wild winds, setting off her increasingly elegant and moving features. With every step she took, Lingxiao's heart grew heavier and heavier. The bitter smile on his elderly face became more obvious than ever.

Boom!

The woman's fist landed fiercely on the stone wall of the formation. A strong crack sounded and the wall shook so much that her body was shaken as well. A gash appeared on her arm and fresh blood began to trickle down from the wound.

"Yun'er."

Qianbei Ye felt an ache in his heart and quickly stepped forward to support Gu Ruoyun's trembling body. He wrinkled his brows and said, "I'll do it."

"No."

Gu Ruoyun shook her head and her eyes were resolute, "Xiao Ye, your powers are indeed great but this formation can't be broken by brute force. Otherwise, Lingxiao would not have been locked in here for so many years. At that time, Zixie had informed me that there was only one way to break the formation! Only the power of the soul can do it! I have two souls within me so only I can break

this formation."

She knew that Qianbei Ye was now very powerful but... This was something that only she who has experienced a rebirth can do.

For anyone else, even a Martial Saint was here, they would never be able to break this formation.

This was why Gu Ruoyun had not asked Qianbei Ye for help.

Boom!

Boom, boom, boom!

Each time Gu Ruoyun's fist slammed on the shapeless formation, a ray of light would flash and strike back fiercely at her. Her arm was now drenched in blood but she never even furrowed her brow.

"Xiao Ye, help me retrieve a few rocks."

Gu Ruoyun staggered back and turned around to speak to Qianbei Ye.

Qianbei Ye gently nodded as his eyes swept towards Gu Ruoyun's wounded arm. Aside from a clear heartache in his eyes, most of it was an infinite amount of murderous intent! Clearly, he wanted to kill the person who had created this formation!

Boom!

Gu Ruoyun's arm did not stop. After countless blows, the light from the formation began to grow weaker. A loud clacking sound could be heard as a transparent crack appeared in thin air.

As this formation could not be seen with the naked eye, the unknowing passerby who has seen the crack would have thought that a rip had formed in the air.

Very soon, Qianbei Ye returned with the stones and walked towards Gu Ruoyun.

Gu Ruoyun had no time to say anything to him. She took one of the stones and threw it at the mid-sized crack in the formation.

Then, she placed the other outside of the formation to create another formation.

"Now, I'm going to use my formation to smash through the formation that the other person had created. This way, Lingxiao would be able to leave this place."

That being said, this was also the most difficult part.

If the opposition was too powerful, both she and Lingxiao will lose their lives!

Boom!

Boom, boom, boom!

Just as Gu Ruoyun finished arranging the formation, the ground began to shake. A ray of white light charged into the skies, enveloping the entire stone chamber.



## Chapter 710: Lingxiao's Return (6)

---

On the East Peak Mainland.

A man was sitting cross-legged with his eyes closed on the holy altar suddenly opened his eyes. His expression slowly turned ugly and an eerie sneer formed on the corners of his lips.

"Someone has touched my formation!"

He laughed icily as ridicule spread throughout his face, "The Black Tortoise, Lingxiao. You once rejected the offer to become this Holy One's mount. As a result, you had been left to waste your life away in the formation created by this Holy One! Nobody would be able to help you!"

"Anyone who tries will die!"

Boom!

In the middle of the white light, Gu Ruoyun could feel a powerful force smashing into her chest. She staggered back and a trickle of blood began to flow from the corner of her lips. At this moment, she cared about nothing else and hurriedly used all of her willpower to resist the attack from the opposition's formation.

"AAAARRGGHH!!!"

Suddenly, a heart-rending scream pierced through the walls and out of the stone chamber. Everyone from the entire Xia family could hear it clearly.

Lingxiao began writhing on the floor in agony. He did not know what was going on either. He felt as if his entire body was wrapped in burning flames and he would turn into ashes in the very next second.

"Lingxiao, your life is at an end! This Holy One has permitted you to stay alive for so long yet you've shown no gratitude for my generosity. Instead, you would dare to try and escape. Last time,

you had used a body double as a substitute for my punishment and I've yet to collect that debt. Now, you've even brought these people."

"Lingxiao, since this is your choice, this Holy One shall turn your body into a toy for fire and burn you alive!"

The voice was grave and stern. The person sounded like a noble supreme ruler who was above all and looked down with disdain upon all living things.

However...

Upon hearing that man's voice, a powerful, raging flame erupted within Gu Ruoyun and burst forth. Her voice dripped with an intense bloodlust, "It's you!!! You're the one who has brought harm to the Azure Dragon and the others. You're the one behind all of this!!!"

She would never forget that person's voice no matter how many tens of thousands of years may pass.

If it had not been for him, Zixie would never have been reduced to a phoenix egg!

If it had not been for him, Shi Yun would never have come into existence!

"Hahaha."

That voice laughed wildly. Following that, Gu Ruoyun felt a heaviness within her body, almost paralyzing her. However, at the most critical moment, an arm reached out from behind and pulled her into a tight embrace.

At the same time, the coercion disappeared and the white light dispersed. The stone chamber had returned to silence once more.

However...

When her eyes fell upon Qianbei Ye, Gu Ruoyun jumped with fright.

Regardless of how much anger the man had displayed in the past, he has never looked as if he had just crawled out from the depths of hell and was drenched in an eerie aura. His already terrifying crimson eyes had turned a deep blood-red. His peerless features were completely shrouded in a cold, terrifying light.

His red robes fluttered despite there being no wind. His silver hair danced around his face and a thick murderous intent erupted, enough to cause anyone to shudder with fear.

Gu Ruoyun had a feeling that if that man had been here, Qianbei Ye would have immediately sliced him into pieces.

No!

Perhaps slicing him up would not be enough!

The aura reeking from his body was far too thick but she could not tell what grudge Qianbei Ye held against that man.

"Qianbei Ye, it seems that you remember who I am now. Hahaha! I really didn't think that from that past turmoil, the number one man in all of the heavens would have turned into the world's first demon! Have you forgotten why your hair had turned into that particular color? Tsk tsk, you look so different from how you had looked like in the past."

That man who addressed himself as 'this Holy One' burst into laughter. His voice carried a palpable sense of mockery.

## Chapter 711: Lingxiao's Return (7)

---

"How unfortunate, you now have your memories back but she knows nothing. However, Qianbei Ye, once she regains all her memories, she would leave you because she'll never forgive you for everything you've done. Hahahaha!"

Qianbei Ye tightened his grip around Gu Ruoyun and his peerless face was now an extremely terrifying sight to behold. He gently pursed his bloodred lips, his thoughts unreadable.

"Alright, that's enough chit-chat for today. Lingxiao will die right here, right now. I won't let you have him!"

Boom!

Lingxiao's already pale face grew even paler under the intense power. Now, the formation was like a large mountain which crushed his body and suffocated him. There was clearly no fire on his body yet his entire being felt as if he was engulfed in flames.

Lingxiao believes that if this continues on, his vital organs would be turned to ash.

"You want to kill Lingxiao?" Gu Ruoyun sneered, "Not if I can do something about it!"

She no longer allowed herself to be distracted and hurriedly used the formation she had constructed to fight back. However, even though the opposition was now heavily wounded because of Zixie, a formation built by a Martial Saint was not at a level where she could hold her own.

As such, this was why she had said that she was not even fifty percent certain about her success.

"Yun'er."

Qianbei Ye turned towards Gu Ruoyun. When his bloodred eyes gazed upon the woman next to him, all traces of murderous intent

vanished and was replaced by an endless warmth.

"Do you trust me?"

Gu Ruoyun nodded, "I trust you."

No matter what anyone says, I will always trust Qianbei Ye.

I believe that this man would never ever harm me.

"Since you trust me, you must do as I say." Qianbei Ye spoke through gritted teeth, "Let go of all your mental energy, stop trying to control this formation."

Gu Ruoyun was stunned.

Relinquish control over this formation?

Doesn't this mean that I would give up on Lingxiao's and my own life?

Because that man is not here and has only been projecting his voice through the formation, his resistance is through this formation as well. If I stopped resisting, everyone is going to die inside the formation.

Why would Qianbei Ye ask me to do such a thing?

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun smiled gently.

She trusts Qianbei Ye, this man who loved her more than life itself. He would never do anything to harm her.

Since he has asked me to relinquish control over the formation, I will do exactly as he says.

At that moment, Gu Ruoyun withdrew all of her strength and lost her control. The rocks placed on the floor instantly became gloomy and useless.

"Qianbei Ye!"

Just as Gu Ruoyun grasped what Qianbei Ye was about to do, an

angered howl sounded through the void, "You vile, treacherous thing!"

"The feeling is mutual."

Qianbei Ye smiled and that smile was different from the rest. It hinted at someone who was about to get his way.

"How does it feel to be attacked by your own power?"

"You..."

The voice grew increasingly angry. The man gritted his teeth and said, "Qianbei Ye, just you wait until I leave this place. I will give you a taste of a fate worse than death!"

The voice then grew softer and softer before fading away altogether.

"Alright," Qianbei Ye turned towards Gu Ruoyun, "You can start smashing the formation. That guy can't control it anymore."

## Chapter 712: Lingxiao's Return (8)

---

"Xiao Ye, what's the meaning of this?"

Gu Ruoyun was completely dumbstruck as she stared in astonishment at Qianbei Ye, "Why had he suddenly..."

"This..." Qianbei Ye blinked and smiled, "It's actually very simple, I only redirected the power he sent out through the formation back to him."

Gu Ruoyun blinked and looked slightly suspicious.

"By the way, what kind of memories was he talking about?"

Qianbei Ye's chest tightened and he subconsciously tightened his grip on Gu Ruoyun, "Yun'er, that's a matter that I can't reveal to you just yet. When the time is right, I'll tell you everything, alright?"

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded, "Alright, I'll wait until you're willing to tell me everything. For now, let's get Lingxiao out of here."

Without that man standing in the way, Gu Ruoyun easily released Lingxiao from the formation.

The moment he stepped out of the formation, Lingxiao looked as if he had been reborn and burst into such joyous laughter. After all these years, it has been such a long time since he has been able to laugh out loud without any inhibition.

Upon hearing that laughter, the people waiting outside the door immediately rushed right back in. When she saw Lingxiao emerge from the formation, Yunyao's lips trembled, momentarily unable to speak. An uncontrollable bout of tears began to stream down her face.

She hurriedly covered her lips to stop herself from crying out.

"Lingxiao, congratulations."

Tianqiong stepped forward and patted Lingxiao on the shoulder.

His handsome face lit up with a smile, "We're finally reunited."

Lingxiao smiled and sighed, "Unfortunately, the Vermillion Bird's whereabouts are still unknown. I don't where that fellow has gone to or whether that fellow had suffered any abuse. That one is far too naive, the kind who would continuously fall for deceit and still help that person out."

"Don't worry, we'll find the Vermillion Bird."

Tianqiong smiled broadly but there was a complex look in his eyes.

"However, I don't think that the Vermillion Bird is on this mainland."

"Not on this mainland?"

Lingxiao was in a daze, "You're saying that the Vermillion Bird is still at the East Peak Mainland?"

"That should be it. Over the past year or two, Yunyao and I have traveled across the entire West Spirit Mainland. Forget about the tracks, we couldn't even detect any trace of the Vermillion Bird's aura. We'll need to leave this mainland in order to find the Vermillion Bird."

Hearing Tianqiong's explanation, everyone fell silent.

East Peak Mainland...

That was a mainland far more superior in power than the West Spirit Mainland. There were countless powerful cultivators at every corner and even a few Martial Saints!

"We should leave as well," Gu Ruoyun returned to her senses and a light flashed in her eyes, "Let's go back to the Dongfang family home first."

Then, without any further hesitation, she walked out of the stone chamber.

...



At the Dongfang family home.

Gu Ruoyun had only just set foot in her home when she collided head-on with a man.

Standing before her was a man dressed in richly embroidered robes with a face as smooth as jade. His features were handsome and refined with a kindly smile upon his lips. His voice was like clear fresh water but when his eyes fell upon the woman before him, they became filled with uncontrollable emotion.

"Yun'er, you're back."

"Uncle?"

Gu Ruoyun stared into space before nodding, "I had arrived here earlier on but I had to go out on an errand. Uncle, why didn't I see you when I was back last time?"

"Well you, young lady, had dumped a terrible mess on us and left." Dongfang Shaoze laughed bitterly. His gentle, jade-like face smiled weakly as he continued, "I had to make a trip to Azure Dragon Country to help you manage the Hundred Herb Hall. Over the past few years, the Hundred Herb Hall has expanded in power, it was certainly no loss for me when I had given it to you all those years ago."

## Chapter 713: Lingxiao's Return (9)

---

Whenever she thought of what he had done for her in the past, Gu Ruoyun's heart would soften.

It goes without saying that in the initial stages of her breakthrough, Dongfang Shaoze has been a great help.

It was likely that at the time, Dongfang Shaoze had no idea that the frail and weak young girl would have transformed herself so quickly. In just a short span of six to seven years, she has grown to a point where even the Three Great Authorities had to be wary of her presence.

He was lucky enough to have noticed the light within her, back when she was still a weakling.

"By the way, Yun'er, a while ago I heard someone mentioning that a young man had come to see you."

"A young man?"

Gu Ruoyun frowned with a puzzled look in her eyes, "Did he mention his name?"

"No, he left once he learned that you were not around. According to the description from the guards, this young man had delicate and pretty features. His eyes were particularly clear and he wore green robes which looked similar to yours. He should be about sixteen to seventeen years of age."

Gu Ruoyun's heart clenched and her clear eyes were overcome with emotion.

Could it be... Was that young man Yu'er?

That's right, it must have been Yu'er!

It can't be anyone else but Yu'er!

Yu'er is still alive!

"Uncle, it seems that our maternal grandmother's birthday is just one month away."

A light flashed in Gu Ruoyun's eyes, "I'd like to ask you to send out invites to as many organizations as you can. Those organizations must be the best of the best in the mainland, including Three Great Authorities as well!"

"Alright."

Dongfang Shaoze nodded, "Two of the Three Great Authorities shouldn't be a problem but the Immortal Realm has a grudge against you. I'm afraid that they won't come."

Gu Ruoyun smiled, "They'll come."

Dongfang Shaoze's eyes flashed with surprise when he saw the resolve on her face but he did not comment on it. He smiled warmly, "Then I'll make the arrangements. You must be tired from your journey. Go get some rest. Your previous room is waiting for you."

Before he left, Dongfang Shaoze glanced at Qianbei Ye who was by Gu Ruoyun's side. However, from the very beginning, the man's eyes seemed to follow only Gu Ruoyun. No matter what anyone said, he did not seem to hear a thing.

It was as if nothing interested him except for matters concerning Gu Ruoyun.

Dongfang Shaoze smiled with delight. With a man like that by Yun'er's side, I can rest assured.

...

Just as Dongfang Shaoze made the announcement, the entire mainland dove into a hurricane of speculation.

Someone, somewhere, had spread the word that the maternal granddaughter of the Dongfang family, Gu Ruoyun, had reached the rank of a Martial Honor. What does being at the rank of a

Martial Honor mean? It was the most powerful rank on this mainland! How had a twenty-year-old woman managed to achieve such a feat?

As such, many were skeptical at the news. Some flatly refused to believe it, considering it some sort of diversion from the Dongfang family.

Still, Qianbei Ye's massacre of the Immortal Realm cultivators during the Divine Trials was deeply etched in the minds of every single person. No one could forget it.

Regardless of whether they believed Gu Ruoyun's rise to the rank of a Martial Honor or not, many powerful cultivators rushed to attend the party due to Lan Yuge's influence in the mainland. Even the Spirit Sect of the Three Great Authorities stepped out and gave the Dongfang family a reply.

They would definitely send representatives on the day of Lan Yuge's birthday celebration!

When they saw that the Spirit Sect had made a decision, the Courts of Hell could not fall behind. Furthermore, Gu Ruoyun had once saved Elder Jiu and their Palace Lord. Hence, they did not hesitate to send their reply either.

## Chapter 714: Lingxiao's Return (10)

---

The organization which had really set tongues wagging was the Immortal Realm. After all, the Immortal Realm held a grudge against Gu Ruoyun so why would they attend Lan Yuge's birthday celebration? It was hard to say but if they do decide to come, it would surely be because they wanted to cause trouble.

Knowing the Immortal Realm's petty nature, how could they possibly spare anyone in the Dongfang family?

Under the fervent discussions of many, the day of Lan Yuge's birthday celebration finally arrived...

Nightfall.

The Dongfang family home was illuminated with many lanterns.

The banquet hall was filled with many wonderful-smelling delicacies. Lan Yuge, supported by Master Dongfang, slowly approached the seat of the master. A graceful smile played on her lips from the very beginning. It goes without saying that due to proper body maintenance, Lan Yuge still looked as young as a twenty-year-old and was stunningly beautiful.

Due to this, she immediately attracted a lot of attention.

"Ahem."

Master Dongfang was not happy at all. He placed his fist on the side of his belt buckle and cleared his throat. He glared at anyone who even dares to look at his wife and scoffed coldly. His elderly face was filled with jealousy.

It seems that I should probably request for a, what do you call it, Beauty Rejuvenation Pill from my maternal granddaughter. To prevent people from staring at my wife every time we go out. They don't even care that I'm standing right next to her!

That's just intolerable bullying!

If it were not for his wife's intervention, he would have torn out their eyes long ago!

"The Medicine Order is here to congratulate Mistress Dongfang on her birthday!"

Just then, a voice rang out from outside the door.

Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow and swept her gaze towards that voice with a smile which did not reach her eyes. When she saw Rong Xin leading a group of girls as she entered the room, a hint of amusement appeared in her eyes.

Rong Xin clearly noticed Gu Ruoyun as well but she did not comment on it. She continued to walk forward before joining her fists and saying, "Congratulations, Madame Dongfang. Servants, present Mistress Dongfang's gift."

During this period of time, she had gathered information on Gu Ruoyun's identity. As it turns out, she was the Master of the Hundred Herb Hall and had the support of the Dongfang family. It seems that if she really planned on killing this woman, it would not be easy.

She could not show any sign of murderous intent especially in front of Lan Yuge. After all, the Medicine Order was no match for the Dongfang family at the moment.

"Thank you, Order Master Rong Xin."

Lan Yuge smiled serenely and waved her hand, "Servants, take Order Master Rong Xin's gift away. Order Master Rong Xin, please have a seat."

Then, she turned towards Gu Ruoyun who was seated next to her.

"Little girl, where is Xiao Ye? I don't see him."

"I don't know," Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "He mentioned that he had something to take care of and that he'll be here once he's

done."

Gu Ruoyun frowned. I haven't even seen Xiao Ye's shadow over these past few days, I don't know what he's up to.

"Master, Mistress!"

Lan Yuge was just about to speak when she was abruptly cut off. She gravely knit her beautiful brows and asked, "What's the matter?"

"Reporting to the Mistress, the Spirit Sect has arrived to congratulate you."

"Oh?" Lan Yuge raised an eyebrow, "Who is the representative of the Spirit Sect?"

"The Young Master of the Spirit Sect! Gu Shengxiao!"

Rustle!

Gu Ruoyun immediately rose to her feet when she heard this. Her clear, cold eyes were overcome with a never-before-seen emotion. Her eyes fixed squarely upon the night sky outside the banquet hall as her entire being shook with excitement.

"Shengxiao?"

Master Dongfang and Lan Yuge went into shock at the very same time. Then, their faces broke into pure joy as they excitedly directed their attention to the door.

# Chapter 715: A Shocking Birthday! (1)

---

The crowd watched as a stern figure appeared before their eyes.

They saw a man walking in the moonlight. He looked extremely handsome with chiseled features. His cold, dark eyes became gentle at the sight of the woman in green before him, "Yun'er..."

Gu Ruoyun quickly stepped out from Lan Yuge's side and appeared in front of Gu Shengxiao in a flash. Her eyes were shining with emotion.

"Big Brother, you've come out?"

Gu Shengxiao nodded as his callused hand stroked Gu Ruoyun's hair. The amount of tenderness in his gaze was as deep as the sea, enough to drown a person alive.

"I heard about the events which had transpired since I was away. I never thought that you would have to endure so much during that time. From now on, Big Brother will protect you, alright?"

Gu Ruoyun's eyes flashed with surprise as she stared at the man before her.

She could sense very clearly that this man was now...

A high-level Martial Honor!

Where on earth had he gone in order to raise his level of power so quickly?

"Shengxiao."

Lan Yuge's expression was filled with immense joy. She gazed at the stern face before her and her eyes filled with pain, "You look just like your father, so very much alike. When I look at the both of you, it's almost like Yu'er and Gu Tian have reappeared once again."

Gu Shengxiao gently pursed his lips. There was a cold firmness in the set of his mouth. After a long pause, he made his way to Lan



Yuge and Master Dongfang. He then threw himself down and knelt on the floor, exclaiming, "Maternal Grandfather, Maternal Grandmother, your grandson has arrived to pay you a visit."

"Good child, please stand up."

Lan Yuge hurriedly stooped down and pulled Gu Shengxiao up from the ground. She discreetly wiped a tear from the corner of her eyes as she gazed at the man in front of her, looking absolutely pleased.

"Even though Yu'er is no longer here, she's left the two of you for me. I'm now content."

Master Dongfang tried to say something but kept it to himself in the end. He patted Lan Yuge's shoulder in a comforting manner, "Don't worry, didn't Yun'er say that Gu Tian and Yu'er are still alive? Someday, our family will be reunited."

"If that truly happens, it would be wonderful."

Lan Yuge laughed bitterly and sighed helplessly. She held onto Gu Ruoyun with one hand and Gu Shengxiao with the other and walked towards the seat of the Master, seating them beside her.

"Ladies and gentlemen, you already know my maternal granddaughter, Gu Ruoyun. This is my maternal grandson, Gu Shengxiao!"

Boom!

The crowd immediately went into a sensation.

Unless we've heard this wrong, this grim-faced man seems to be the Young Sect Master of the Spirit Sect!

The Young Sect Master of the Spirit Sect is Lan Yuge's maternal grandson?

It seems that the Dongfang family has increased their prestige, no one can provoke them now.

Rong Xin clenched her fair, white fist as a malicious glint flashed

in her eyes like a dagger.

"When I first found out that Gu Ruoyun is a member of the Dongfang family, I knew that killing her would be extremely difficult. Now, the Spirit Sect has become involved as well! This will make it even more difficult to go against her. If I can't kill this woman, I will never be able to kill that sl\*t, Wei Yiyi!"

No!

This won't do!

I must find a way to kill them both!

Suddenly, she felt a pair of eyes watching her. Rong Xin hurriedly withdrew the murderous intent in her eyes and turned to face Gu Ruoyun as she broke into a smile.

Gu Ruoyun glanced at Rong Xin with a smile that did not reach her eyes. She soon withdrew her gaze after that.

## Chapter 716: A Shocking Birthday! (2)

---

Honestly speaking, there was no need for her to pay any attention to someone like Rong Xin.

"Reporting to the Master, Mistress. The Palace Lord and the Young Master of the Courts of Hell have arrived to give their congratulations."

Before the crowd could calm down, another announcement was made.

When they heard this announcement, the crowd immediately burst into another frenzy,

Gu Shengxiao's attendance was considered to be within expectations. After all, he was a member of the Dongfang family as well. However, to have the Palace Lord and the Young Master of the Courts of Hell personally make an appearance? With their prestigious titles, sending out a random disciple would have been more than enough.

A flash of purple robes appeared from outside the door and the crowd watched as a handsome man slowly entered with a ten-year-old youth in hand. A group of chamberlains followed closely behind them.

Lan Yuge hurriedly rose to her feet and was just about to go down and welcome them when the Palace Lord waved his hand and stopped her in her tracks.

"Mistress Dongfang, there's no need for ceremony. This is your birthday celebration and I'm here to give you my wishes." The Palace Lord smiled and said, "Furthermore, I want to thank Lady Gu for saving my life."

Even though it was actually the Ghost Doctor who had cleared the poison from him, the Ghost Doctor belonged under Gu Ruoyun as well. If it had not been for Gu Ruoyun, he could not possibly

have hired the Ghost Doctor no matter how much he had been willing to pay.

Unwittingly, his words caused a few ignorant parties to direct their attention to Gu Ruoyun. Their eyes flashed with deep astonishment and shock.

"Palace Lord, you are too kind."

Lan Yuge smiled and exclaimed.

"This is just something that I ought to do. If it wasn't for Lady Gu, I would have been dead by now." The Palace Lord turned towards Gu Ruoyun and smiled, "Lady Gu has not only helped Elder Jiu in curing his ailing body, allowing him to break through to become a Martial Honor, she had even pulled me from the clutches of Death. So, naturally, I must pay my respects to you, Mistress Dongfang."

Boom?

It almost seems like a strong hurricane had just crashed through the room.

Everyone present was gaping in shock.

Elder Jiu's ailment was common knowledge to everyone in this room. It was an illness which every doctor on the mainland had declared to be incurable. Yet she had somehow managed to cure him and in the process helped him to break through to the rank of a Martial Honor?

This woman, what kind of abnormality is she?

Lan Yuge was in shock as well but she kept her cool and smiled, "You must have had a very long and tiring journey, Palace Lord. Servants, please hurry up and add more seats."

"Yes."

The Palace Lord smiled and walked hand-in-hand with the Young Master to their seats which were specially provided by Lan Yuge.

Whenever his eyes fell upon Gu Ruoyun, his gaze would become filled with gratitude.

He will remember her kindness for the rest of his life.

"I didn't think that the Palace Lord of the Amethyst Underworld Palace would personally make an appearance!" Rong Xin clenched her fist tighter and tighter. Her nails dug into her skin but she did not seem to feel it at all. Her eyes were filled with hatred and anger, "I can't accept this. I can't accept the fact that that sl\*t, Wei Yiyi, has won! One day, I will have them completely defeated and fallen from grace. I'll ensure that they meet a tragic end!"

Actually, Gu Ruoyun and Rong Xin had nothing personal against one another. However, Rong Xin hated Wei Yiyi so deeply that even Gu Ruoyun had ended up being dragged into her vendetta.

"Hehe, I wonder if this Honorable One has arrived too late!"

Suddenly, a maniacal laughter rang out from thin air. Before anyone could regain their senses, they saw a group of men in white descending from the skies and walking into the grand hall.

Standing in front of the white-robed group was a middle-aged man. His expression was cold and haughty. The powerful aura emitting from his body immediately made everyone in the room feel suffocated.

# Chapter 717: A Shocking Birthday! (3)

---

"This... High-level Martial Honor? Is he..."

The Immortal Master of the Immortal Realm!

Unexpectedly, someone other than the Palace Lord of the Courts of Hell had made a personal appearance. The Immortal Master of the Immortal Realm has arrived as well!

Heavens, the Dongfang family garners too much respect. Not only did they manage to invite the Three Great Authorities, even the most important figures have gathered here tonight.

Whoosh!

Gu Shengxiao fiercely rose to his feet. His grim eyes shot towards the conceited looking man as he said, "Immortal Master of the Immortal Realm, I didn't think that you'd actually grace the Dongfang family with your presence. Unfortunately, if you plan on causing trouble here, don't blame me for my lack of courtesy!"

"Hehe," The Immortal Master chuckled softly. His eyes swept below him before finally landing on Gu Shengxiao's handsome face. He sneered, "If the Spirit Sect's Master was here, he would have the authority to speak to me. Unfortunately... You don't!"

Boom!

The Immortal Master released his high-level Martial Honor aura and aimed it all at Gu Shengxiao like a hurricane.

However, Gu Shengxiao's expression did not change as he stood beneath the torrential winds. His handsome face was as grim as ever.

"Mmm?"

The Immortal Master was slightly taken aback. He withdrew his aura and fixed his gaze upon Gu Shengxiao.

"A high-level Martial Honor? I didn't think that you'd actually

break through to a high-level Martial Honor. Now, you have some semblance of authority to speak to me."

What?

A high-level Martial Honor?

The crowd went into shock. The initially silent crowd now began to whisper amongst one another under their breaths.

Every one of them was aware of what being a high-level Martial Honor meant. This Young Sect Master of the Spirit Sect has actually reached the rank of a high-level Martial Honor! This means that he was on the same level as the Immortal Master of the Immortal Realm.

However, it seems that Gu Shengxiao does not place any importance on the Immortal Master's words.

Gu Shengxiao's grim eyes stared coldly at the Immortal Master's arrogant visage. A cold light flashed in his handsome, chiseled face, "If you're here as a guest, the Dongfang family welcomes you. If you're here to cause trouble, then the Spirit Sect will not stand idly by."

"The same goes for me!"

The Lord of the Amethyst Underworld Palace slowly rose to his feet. A smile appeared on his handsome visage but his words sounded more like a warning, "The Dongfang family can be considered as my savior. If you even think of touching them, the Amethyst Underworld Palace will never condone it."

They have all heard of the feud between Gu Ruoyun and the Immortal Realm. So, no one believed that the Immortal Master of the Immortal Realm had simply come here just to pay his respects to Lan Yuge.

Clearly, one should beware of suspicious folk bearing gifts. They are sure to be ill-intentioned!

"Ha, ha, ha."

Suddenly, the Immortal Master laughed maniacally. His laughter pierced through the night sky and was filled with unbridled arrogance.

His inky black hair danced in the wild winds. When paired with that over-the-top laugh, it was an extremely terrifying sight.

"You've both gotten it wrong, I've come here today to send my regards to the Mistress of the Dongfang family. And another thing..." He paused, directing his sharp gaze towards Gu Ruoyun who had remained silent the entire time. He then spoke in a compelling manner, "Lady Gu, your powers and talents are indeed astounding. I've come here in regards to another matter."

"All of you know that the battle between this mainland and the demons will be arriving very soon. As such, I'm here to invite Lady Gu to join the Immortal Realm so that we can stand together and win the next battle."

Actually, since Gu Ruoyun has killed so many members of the Immortal Realm, the Immortal Master dearly wished that he could take this woman's life!

However, at the same time, to lose a genius of her caliber would be very unfortunate.



## Chapter 718: A Shocking Birthday! (4)

---

Hence, he had decided to give her one last chance. If Gu Ruoyun agrees to join the Immortal Realm, he would let bygones be bygones. Otherwise, this woman would not be spared!

"You..."

Lan Yuge's face was ashen. She clenched her fist so tightly that it trembled. If Master Dongfang had not attempted to calm her down, she would probably have ended up playing right into the Immortal Master's hands.

"Maternal Grandmother," Gu Shengxiao shot Lan Yuge a meaningful look and shook his head. He then turned towards the Immortal Master again and spoke to him in a rather grim voice, "My younger sister will never join the Immortal Realm."

That one reply sent the Immortal Master's thoughts flying right back.

"Gu Shengxiao!"

The Immortal Master's expression was an extremely ugly sight to behold and a cold light flashed in his haughty eyes, "I've mentioned this before, you only have the right to speak to me now but you don't have the right to criticize or issue orders to me! Even if your master was here, he would not be worthy either!"

"Hehe! The Immortal Realm is certainly awe-inspiring. Not only do they threaten the younger generation, they place no importance upon the other two Great Authorities. Everyone else may fear the Immortal Realm but I, the Honorable Poison Master, have never been afraid of you."

Suddenly, a cold and eerie laugh pieced through the night sky, falling into every ear of everyone present.

Under the cold glow of the moon, a figure dressed in black robes appeared. The elder who was enveloped in darkness descended

from the skies. His face was dark and eerie yet despite the smile on his face, it was difficult to change the rigidness of his expression.

The Honorable Poison Master!

What was this guy doing here?

This time, even Master Dongfang and Lan Yuge were in shock.

While the Honorable Poison Master's powers could not be compared with the powerful cultivators of the Three Great Authorities, he was still quite famous on the mainland especially for his perfect expertise in the art of poison, which was absolutely terrifying. However, this time, the Dongfang family had not invited him to the banquet so what is he doing here?

Furthermore, he seems to be protecting the Dongfang family...

"Your Excellency, the Honorable Poison Master," Lan Yuge rose to her feet and asked in a courteous manner, "May I ask what business you have with us today?"

The Honorable Poison Master waved his hand and walked towards Gu Ruoyun before the eyes of the crowd.

"Little girl, you've certainly made an old man like me search high and low during this time. It's been a few years, I wonder if you've built an organization yet?" The Honorable Poison Master smiled eerily, "I've mentioned this to you before that if you do manage to build your own organization, I will certainly join you."

The Honorable Poison Master had mentioned this to Gu Ruoyun before.

He has engraved it in his memories.

Lan Yuge looked extremely shocked. She widened her beautiful eyes at the woman who was seated next to her, "Yun'er, what's the meaning of this?"

Without having to mention the fact that the Honorable Poison Master was already a Martial Honor, simply based on his strange

personality, he would normally refuse to accept any disciples, what more agree to join someone's organization. Yet he himself had made such a promise!

Also, it had been to a woman who was much weaker than he was!

Regardless of how many rumors were circulating concerning Gu Ruoyun's breakthrough to the rank of a Martial Honor, what one hears might be hearsay but seeing is believing. They had not believed in those rumors at all and still thought of Gu Ruoyun as a Martial Emperor from two years back.

Besides, her breakthrough to Martial Emperor was not too long ago. How could she have broken through to Martial Honor in such a short period of time?

Rong Xin's expression was growing uglier by the second. She fixated her malicious glare towards that elegant face as she clenched her fists tightly next to her body. She took a deep breath to suppress the raging fire within her soul.

Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly but made no remark. She turned her head towards the Immortal Master and spoke in a clear, cold voice, "My apologies. I had once rejected an offer from the Immortal Realm and now, more than ever, I won't agree to your terms! I, Gu Ruoyun, have never willingly served anyone! Most importantly... Even if the Immortal Realm can forget everything which I'd done to you, I can't forget the harm you had brought to the people around me during those years! From the very moment Xiao Ye had fallen into his coma, I have vowed that the Immortal Realm and I will remain mortal enemies for life!!!"

# Chapter 719: A Shocking Birthday! (5)

---

Mortal enemies!!!

The words echoed through the crowd and only dissipated after a long period of time.

Some families who on good terms with the Dongfang family began to show anxiety as they constantly looked over at Lan Yuge, wishing that they could convince her to placate Gu Ruoyun.

After all, the Immortal Realm was simply too terrifying. Even if Gu Ruoyun was a genius, there was still a chance that she could come to a premature end.

Even if her brother was now a high-level Martial Honor and the Young Sect Master of the Spirit Sect, he was only the Young Sect Master. How could the Spirit Sect possibly want to become enemies with the Immortal Realm at a time like this! By then, the person who ends up being left behind would be her!

This girl really has no concept of what's good for her!

The crowd sighed at the thought as they shook their heads exasperatedly.

Those who have longed for the Dongfang family's downfall, however, were clearly rejoicing in their misfortune, especially Rong Xin. She held onto the highest of hopes that Gu Ruoyun would seriously anger the Immortal Master. Once that happens, she could utilize the Immortal Realm's hand in helping her to get rid of this calamity.

Just then...

A wave of uniform footsteps sounded from outside the hall, immediately drawing the crowd's attention.

"What's going on?"

"What's that sound? Why does it feel like a large crowd has

arrived?"

"This..."

Once they saw what was going on outside, everyone in the crowd was stunned.

Countless people walked into the banquet hall all clothed in uniforms. Their bodies emitted strong auras and furthermore... the lowest ranked among them seems to be... Martial Kings?

"That... Who are those people? How have I not met them before?"

"Their robes look rather strange yet they don't seem to belong to any of the top ranking forces. Furthermore, I can't sense the ranks of the four leaders at the front. They are far too powerful. I could sense a suffocating feeling amongst them at first glance."

"Martial Honors! There's no mistake about it, those four are Martial Honors! What other organization could possibly contain four Martial Honors aside from the Three Great Authorities?"

Everyone gasped as they stared in shock at the group of people who had just entered the room.

Lan Yuge blinked and looked dazedly at Dongfang Shaoze, "Ze'er, who are these people? Had you invited them?"

Dongfang Shaoze was in shock as well. He swept his gaze across every face in the group before suddenly coming to a realization. A heavy shockwave spread throughout his gentle, jade-like features.

"Aren't those Yun'er's followers? I've seen them at the Hundred Herb Hall before, I think that their names are Xunfeng and Moyu!"

What?

Lan Yuge shook and looked dazedly at Gu Ruoyun, "Yun'er, are these your people?"

Gu Ruoyun smiled and turned her gaze towards the people beneath her.

Xunfeng and Moyu were two of the first people that she had taken under her wing, they were also the Left and Right Protectors of the Devil Sect! As for the four Martial Honors before her, she had brought them over from the Banished Lands. She has now merged Black Rock City with the Devil Sect.

As such, the four of them were now Elders of the Devil Sect.

She had moved the entire Devil Sect from that mountain into Xiao Hei.

It goes without saying that a month's worth of cultivation inside Xiao Hei was highly effective. Now, everyone had broken through to the rank of a Martial King! That also means that the lowest rank in the Devil Sect was a Martial King.

"Little girl, is it true that all these people belong to you?"

## Chapter 720: A Shocking Birthday! (6)

---

Master Dongfang's entire being was in shock. His beard was in disarray and the stupefaction on his face was extremely obvious. He nearly scooped Gu Ruoyun into his arms and kissed her.

There are four Martial Honors here!

Even people of my rank would need to show them respect whenever I meet them.

However, these powerful people are actually serving my maternal granddaughter willingly?

"That's right," Gu Ruoyun nodded and said, "They're all mine. Today, I've asked them here to show my power to the world."

Boom!

In the beginning, the crowd had still been making wild guesses. Now that they had received Gu Ruoyun's confirmation, their expressions all turned exceptionally marvelous.

"Hahaha!"

Master Dongfang burst into a clear and bright laugh that pierced through the night skies.

He never thought that his very own maternal daughter would have been able to transform herself to such a degree. If that old man from the Gu family were here, he might even kill himself out of regret.

After all, Gu Ruoyun was his kin as well yet she had been chased away by his insatiable greed. At that time, he probably would never have imagined that the young girl who had constantly received the Gu family's abuse and humiliation would end up with these achievements.

Tears began to roll down the old man's eyes as he laughed.

This was the first time he has ever cried in years!

"Yu'er, do you see this? Both your son and daughter have turned out to be so outstanding yet you can't see this."

Lan Yuge looked a little sad too as she gazed at the slightly familiar features on the face of the woman next to her. Most of it, however, came from a sense of longing.

If Yu'er were here to see how outstanding her children have become, she would be so proud...

"Devil Sect, did she just mention the Devil Sect?"

"I know about this Devil Sect. They say that it's an organization which had suddenly emerged five years ago! At the time, they had utilized one short year to build their reputation. Many have tried to find the location of the Devil Sect's headquarters but all have failed. Still, how old was she five years ago? She should only be about fifteen years old or so and she has already managed achieved this much?"

Hearing this, the crowd began to sigh continuously. A fifteen-year-old girl has actually managed to reach such a level.

By comparison, they should all be considered good-for-nothings at that age!

Gu Ruoyun calmly raised the corners of her lips but her dark eyes remained clear and cold.

"I will join the battle against the demons as the Sect Master of the Devil Sect! However, I will never join the Immortal Realm!"

The Immortal Master's expression sank once more and his thoughts were unreadable.

Suddenly, a loud bang sounded and an immeasurably powerful force came rushing in from outside the hall, causing his heart to tremble violently. His handsome face filled with shock.

The movement was so fast that no one else could see what it was.

This time, even Gu Ruoyun was surprised. She knitted her brows



and directed her gaze along the dimness of the night towards the courtyard outside the banquet hall.

"Hooowl!"

"Roar!"

The sounds of countless spiritual animals could be heard from outside the door, especially the sounds of their movements on the ground. It felt like an earthquake and caused everyone in the hall to rise to their feet as panic and fear crept into their eyes.

All sorts of spiritual beasts covered the skies, forming a dense mass and blocking out the cold glow of the moon.

There were wolves, leopards, tigers... They ran wildly towards the hall from all directions, trampling the trees to the ground. The main gate was completely knocked down by a Gale Wolf then trampled into smithereens by whatever spiritual beasts which were following it.

## Chapter 721: A Shocking Birthday! (7)

---

It was not just the members of the Dongfang family, even the citizens of Dongfang City were scared out of their wits. Everyone locked their doors, deathly afraid that the spiritual beasts would enter their homes.

It felt like the end of the world!

At this very moment, everyone felt as if the world had descended into Armageddon.

There were such a great number of spiritual beasts that it looked like almost all the spiritual beasts on West Spirit Mainland has turned up.

"Little girl, was this your doing as well?" Master Dongfang has obviously received a great shock. His eyes hurriedly turned towards Gu Ruoyun as he asked nervously.

Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "No, I don't have the ability to gather all the spiritual beasts on West Spirit Mainland."

"What? If this wasn't your doing, then who?" The Master looked like he was in a panic as his elderly features turned very pale, "We're finished. Someone must have a score to settle with the Dongfang family and is going to use the spiritual beasts to trample us to the ground. There's so many of them, not even a high-level Martial Warrior can go up against them all."

Gu Shengxiao frowned and pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms. His grim eyes glared vigilantly at the spiritual beasts charging towards them as he released the powerful aura within him. His aura erupted into a torrential hurricane which caused his black robes to dance wildly in the winds.

"Gu Ruoyun!" Rong Xin's expression had turned into an extremely ugly shade as she glared fiercely at the woman's serene features.

I can't understand this, how could this woman still be so calm in a situation like this?

Does she not feel fear at all?

"Speak! Have you provoked someone who should not have been provoked and dragged all of us innocents down with you?" Rong Xin's entire face was burning with rage, "We had come here to congratulate Madam Dongfang, not to die! If you want to die, go die on your own. There's no need to drag us down with you!"

Rustle, rustle!

Instantly, all eyes turned to face Gu Ruoyun.

Those who already hold a grudge against the Dongfang family would never let such an opportunity slip by as they all began to criticize, "I knew that the Dongfang family would not live in harmony for long! Especially since this Gu Ruoyun seems to love stirring up trouble, hasn't she provoked enough enemies? Someone clearly hates her to the bone and now they want to drench Madam Dongfang's birthday celebration with blood."

"That's right. If I had known about this, I would never have attended this bullsh\*t birthday celebration! I'm about to throw my own life away here!"

"Master Dongfang, we still have some other matters to attend to so we'll be leaving now. You can take care of these spiritual beasts yourselves. This has nothing to do with us."

A group of people made a move to leave as they spoke.

However, they clearly did not have the chance to leave now. Numerous spiritual beasts have surrounded the entire Dongfang City from the skies to the ground. They were clustered together in large groups but the spiritual beasts stopped advancing once they reached the Dongfang family home. The spiritual beasts eyed the people before them like a tiger watching its prey.

Just as the crowd began to fill with hopelessness, a crimson light

enveloped the skies. The flaming ray of light shone so brightly that it seemed to illuminate the entire mainland.

A great fire dragon charged past the spiritual beasts and appeared before all of them. Its body burned with raging flames, making it look as if its entire body had been constructed from living fire. It let out a fearsome roar and the sky shone with a bright and beautiful shade of blood red.

However...

When her eyes fell upon the person standing on the fire dragon, Gu Ruoyun's lucid yet elegant face turned astonished.

The man's silvery hair danced in the night wind as the light from the flames set off a mesmerizing glow against his blood-red robes.

## Chapter 722: A Shocking Birthday! (8)

---

The man stood silently on the fire dragon's back. His peerless features carried a dark yet cloudy light. His face was devoid of any expression yet he looked so magnificent that no one could tear their eyes away. He noticed the astonishment in the woman's eyes below him and gently lowered his clear, cold eyes. His initially cold and bloodthirsty gaze then softened.

"Xiao Ye, what are you doing?"

Gu Ruoyun was in a daze. What is this guy doing? Why has he brought so many spiritual beasts here?

The man finally showed a reaction when he heard her question...

He stepped forward and descended towards the courtyard.

One step, two steps...

With every step he took, Gu Ruoyun felt as if the peerlessly beautiful man was only half the distance away from her! Upon his third step, the man who had been in midair was now right in front of her.

"Yun'er, I'd like to ask for your hand in marriage."

The man smiled and everything under the heavens seemed to lose their color. That smile was unimaginably beautiful.

"These are my betrothal gift to you. Do you like it?"

"Huh?"

Gu Ruoyun was in a daze.

Betrothal gift?

Is he using all the spiritual beasts from the entire mainland as a betrothal gift?

He was probably the only one in this entire world who has the capability of achieving such a monumental task.

As such, once the man had spoken, the crowd went into a sensation once again.

This sensation surpassed any other sensation of the night!

As they looked at the spiritual beasts before them, they could see that there were more than just a handful of them. In fact, there must be tens of thousands of spiritual beasts here! These were probably all the spiritual beasts which lived on this mainland yet he had been able to order them to come here?

Just what kind of evil thing is this silver-haired man with the red robes?

And most importantly, with so many powerful spiritual beasts in his hands, he had given them all away without even blinking?

There were many unmarried women on the scene as well. When they saw the large gesture displayed by Qianbei Ye, their hearts filled with jealousy! Of course, jealousy breeds jealousy. They also know that in the entire West Spirit Mainland, only a genius like Gu Ruoyun could possibly receive the favor in this man's eyes.

Everyone else was not even worth a single bit of his attention.

Master Dongfang was totally in shock now. After the wave of shock, he was overcome with emotion. His eyes shone as he stared at the powerful spiritual beasts before him. However, he soon remembered his dignified position in the Dongfang family. Master Dongfang cleared his throat and forced himself to look away from the great number of spiritual beasts before him.

Even so, he could not help but want to steal a peek at them for just one more time...

Gu Shengxiao frowned lightly as he glanced at the man standing before his little sister. His expression was as grim as ever. Aside from Gu Ruoyun, no one could ever make him change his expression in any way.

Especially since this man was trying to snatch his sister away

from him!

Rong Xin's expression was exceptionably ugly at this point as her eyes filled with envy and jealousy. However, any woman would draw comparisons between such an outstanding man and her own husband! Obviously, her own husband could not be compared with Qianbei Ye.

More accurately speaking, he far from this level.

Hence, she was jealous of Gu Ruoyun who had a man like this by her side.

Qianbei Ye turned around towards the spiritual beasts clustered behind him and the smile on his face disappeared. He spoke in a gloomy voice, "From now onwards, she is your Master!"

Roar!

Instantly, the dense mass before him knelt in a uniform manner.

All the spiritual beasts displayed great reverence on their faces and replied altogether, "Your wish is our command, great Sovereign King. From now on, we will follow you, Master, and serve you for all eternity!"

## Chapter 723: A Shocking Birthday! (9)

---

"Yun'er," Qianbei Ye turned back to face Gu Ruoyun after making his announcement. His peerless features softened again as he smiled gently and said, "There are many spiritual beasts here for you to choose from. Whoever you choose will be your subordinate from now on. They will protect you with their life."

Gu Ruoyun fell silent. After a long pause, she turned towards the silver-haired man and said, "Xiao Ye, were you away from the Dongfang family for so many days because you had been putting this together?"

Qianbei Ye nodded sincerely, "During the past few days, I've been journeying to the four corners of the lands to gather these spiritual beasts here. This has taken up quite a few days of my time. Yun'er, will you accept them?"

"I will."

Gu Ruoyun smiled and felt very moved.

Qianbei Ye had known that she lacks influence most of all at this point! As such, he had taken the time to gather the spiritual beasts together and showed them off flamboyantly in front of the eyes of the world.

How have I been so fortunate to meet a man like this?

"Yun'er, your acceptance of my betrothal gift means that you're willing to marry me."

Qianbei Ye smiled like a happy child, "Since you've agreed, you can't back out now."

"This..." Gu Ruoyun rubbed her nose and smiled gently, "Wait until we've found my parents. If they agree, then I'll agree as well."

"Yun'er, don't worry. I will find father-in-law and mother-in-law. When that time comes, I will make you my wife and let every man



know that you're mine! In case anyone tries to steal a peep at you."

Each time he thought of Ye Nuo who loved to hang around Gu Ruoyun, Qianbei Ye would feel very unhappy. He would even speak in a sulky tone of voice.

"Cough, cough."

Lan Yuge let out a dry cough and her beautiful eyes filled with a smile, "Since Xiao Ye has arrived, let's take our seats, the banquet is about to begin..."

"Hold on!"

Gu Ruoyun smiled and cut Lan Yuge off, "Didn't some of you want to leave? I'm giving you the permission to leave now!"

"This..."

Upon hearing this, the group of people who had initially made a huge fuss suddenly became absolutely silent.

They had said those things because they were worried that the spiritual beasts would devour them whole. However, who would have thought that these spiritual beasts were a betrothal gift from Gu Ruoyun from that silver-haired man? At this rate, the Dongfang family's power will only grow stronger and they had not even started to curry favor with them. How could they bear to leave now?

"What? Weren't you all making huge fuss not so long ago? Now, you're all keeping quiet?" Gu Ruoyun smiled icily, "Those who have expressed their intentions to leave better leave right now. Otherwise, I'll make sure that you'll never be able to leave at all."

As they heard the woman's clear and cold voice, the group of people looked at one another, unsure of what to do.

"I'll give you all one last chance. Leave immediately! Otherwise, well... I'm sure that these spiritual beasts must be tired from their long journey. They're probably aching to have you all for dinner."

Gu Ruoyun's voice grew increasingly clear and cold, "The Dongfang family will only entertain friends, we do not wish to have anyone who schemes against us."

Roar!

Hearing this, the spiritual beasts began to make their move. Their eyes stared greedily and cruelly at the group of people who had previously drummed up a monumental fuss.

"Hmph."

Rong Xin straightened her robes and took one final look at Gu Ruoyun before turning to leave without another word.

When they saw that someone had made the first move, the others sheepishly walked away as well without saying another word to Lan Yuge.

## Chapter 724: A Shocking Birthday! (10)

---

"Seeing as I've made an appearance, I should take my leave as well."

The Immortal Master smiled icily and even though he was speaking to Lan Yuge, his eyes had remained on Gu Ruoyun.

"Furthermore, Gu Ruoyun, I'll leave you with this warning - the Heavens are watching over us. Having committed so many murderous acts, you will definitely be cast into eternal hell one day, never to be reincarnated. The best way out is to join the Immortal Realm and repent. Otherwise, when you die, you will endure an endless torment. You'd better shape up."

After delivering this, the Immortal Master too turned around and left.

Just as he was turning to leave, Qianbei Ye directed his gaze towards him. His red eyes were filled with a crimson and terrifying murderous intent.

The Immortal Master did not sense the murderous eyes staring right at him. Of course, even if he did, he would not have cared. In his point of view, not even the Spirit Sect's Master or the Lord of the Courts of Hell would be a match for him. On this mainland, who else could possibly defeat him?

"Ladies and gentlemen, let the feast begin."

Without the presence of that particular group of people, Lan Yuge's mood improved greatly. She greeted the rest of the guests and said, "There's one more thing, the Dongfang family has prepared gifts for you and will be giving them to you before you depart."

The remaining guests finally regained their senses from the shock.

They believe that after this banquet, Gu Ruoyun's name would

resonate throughout the entire mainland and the Devil Sect will soon become an unstoppable force!

With so many spiritual beasts, even the Three Great Authorities would be in a dilemma.

Furthermore, her fiancé happens to be the kind of person who was able to command this group of spiritual beasts...

It was obvious that their predictions were accurate. At the end of the banquet, news of everything which had transpired in the Dongfang family spread throughout the mainland.

Though Gu Ruoyun's actual rank in power still remains unclear, she was still the Devil Sect's Master and has four Martial Honors as her subordinates. Even the powerful Honorable Poison Master has personally requested to join her. However, the most shocking thing of all was that every spiritual beast on the mainland was now in the palm of her hand.

This also means that Gu Ruoyun can now be considered on equal terms with the Three Great Authorities!

Her powers may not be at the rank of a high-level Martial Honor but because she can rely on so many spiritual beasts, she has now become an invincible force — one that not even the Three Great Authorities could defeat! Unless they combine their forces, they would not even stand a chance.

But how could that be possible?

Even if one were to put aside the fact that she was the savior of the Palace Lord of the Courts of Hell, her biological brother was the Young Master of the Spirit Sect! These two Authorities would obviously ally themselves with her. The Immortal Realm alone was no match for her...

As such, over the past few days, with the absence of the Immortal Realm's trouble-making, Gu Ruoyun led a rather peaceful life.

At the Dongfang family home.

Gu Ruoyun was in the middle of a discussion with Master Dongfang in the study when a footboy rushed in suddenly and announced, "Reporting to the Master, there's someone here to see the Eldest Lady."

"Oh?" Master Dongfang wrinkled his brows, "Who is it?"

"That person calls himself Xia Linyu, he even said..."

Whoosh!

Before he could finish his sentence, a ray of light had charged out of the study. When Master Dongfang regained his senses, Gu Ruoyun had disappeared from the room.

"This idiot girl," Master Dongfang shook his head in exasperation, "I wonder who this Xia Linyu is to her to cause such a great reaction. She certainly didn't act like this when she returned to the Dongfang family home."

Master Dongfang could not help but feel a twinge of jealousy at the thought.

# Chapter 725: Shifting The Blame (1)

---

A figure stood in the courtyard under a willow tree. A flash of green robes gently fluttered under the breeze.

The young man was tall and slim with a lean build. He sensed footsteps behind him and turned around. His limpid eyes lit up with a smile, "Big Sister, I'm here to see you."

When Gu Ruoyun heard the young man's voice, she slowed her pace and gazed upon the youth's delicate features. An indescribable emotion was bubbling up within her.

"Yu'er, you're back."

Suddenly, she smiled. It was a smile unlike her usual cold and elegant demeanor. Under the sunlight, this smile seemed to hold a warm light.

She did not ask where the youth had been.

All she cares about was that he was back and that was enough.

"Sister," Xia Linyu smiled delicately and his black eyes were like pools of clear water, "I've heard much news about you over the past few days. I never imagined that my sister would turn out so magnificently. I've been working hard in my cultivation to catch up to your level so I can protect you but no matter how hard I try, I still can't catch up to you."

"However..."

The youth raised his delicate features and his eyes were filled with smiles, "Big Sister, you are my heroine and my pride."

"Yu'er," Gu Ruoyun smiled as she ruffled the youth's hair. Her lucid features were filled with joy, "In our past life, I had caused your death through my ignorance. In this life, I'll never let any danger come to you."

"Sister..."

Xia Linyu gently pursed his lips, his eyes were fixated on the face before him, "In the past, it was I who had dragged you down. It won't ever happened again. If it had not been for me, you would never have ended up like this either."

Back then, I had been a good-for-nothing who was unable to cultivate. If I had the ability to protect myself at that time, perhaps my sister would not have ended up dying as well.

His heart throbbed fiercely at the thought, it was an agonizing feeling.

"Yu'er, have you returned to the Xia family home yet?"

Gu Ruoyun seems to remember something and asked.

She clearly meant the Xia family in Heaven City and not the one at the East Peak Mainland.

"I had returned to the Xia family home a few days ago and found out that you had gone back to the Dongfang family home so I immediately rushed here to see you. Along the way, I heard many stories about your glorious achievements. I feel very proud." Xia Linyu smiled, "Sister, when are we going back to East Peak Mainland? I can't wait to find that bastard Xia Ming and have our revenge!"

"Xia Ming?"

Gu Ruoyun gently stroked her chin and laughed silently, "Soon. We'll be going back very soon. Once everything settles down over here, we'll set out to the East Peak Mainland. By then, we'll avenge ourselves for everything which has happened in our past lives. I don't know if Xia Ming and Lu Chen will be able to recognize me."

I still have a few unfinished businesses here.

Once I've settled it all, I can leave and head towards the East Peak Mainland!

...

"Order Master, you've returned?"

At the Medicine Order.

Rong Xin had only just stepped in through the door when she was greeted by many figures. They knelt in front of her and spoke with reverence, "Your subordinates welcome your return, Order Master."

"Mm."

Hearing this, Rong Xin nodded. Her eyes shot a look and she smiled icily, "Wu Xin, gather all the elders. I have instructions."

"Yes, Order Master."

The woman named Wu Xin who was dressed in white left in a respectful manner.

Rong Xin fell silent for a moment before heading towards the direction of the elder's meeting room without another thought.

"Gu Ruoyun, I don't care what powers you possess. As long as you're helping that sl\*t, Wei Yiyi, I'll find ways to kill you!"

Rong Xin sneered as she thought of her pact with the Immortal Realm.



## Chapter 726: Shifting The Blame (2)

---

Just as she was rushing towards the meeting room, a handsome figure appeared in front of her. She frowned when she saw him and stopped, "What are you doing here?"

"I heard that you've returned so I came here to see you. By the way, did you manage to meet that sl\*t, Wei Yiyi?"

The handsome man was smiling but when Wei Yiyi's name crossed his lips, his eyes filled with endless loathing.

Years ago, if it had not been for the fact that Wei Yiyi was the old Medicine Order Master's favorite disciple, I would never have schemed to make her fall for me. Who would have thought that this Wei Yiyi would turn out to be such a jealous woman and forbade me from interacting with other women!

So, I can't be blamed for betraying her.

"No," Rong Xin shook her head, "I'm going to convene with the elders to go up against Wei Yiyi."

"I never imagined that Wei Yiyi would have such a high survival ability to stay alive even after so many years. Not only is she still alive, she has even managed to get rid of the poison in her system and her powers have returned." The man sneered and spat hatefully, "However, that Wei Yiyi sure is capable to gain the Dongfang family's favor. But so what? The Dongfang family may be growing more powerful in strength but they can't possibly shield one subordinate. Just have the Dongfang family hand her over, why waste your time?"

Rong Xin's lips curled into a disdainful smile and her beautiful eyes filled with mockery.

"Lin Jun, I didn't think that you'll be so stupid even after all these years! If I had been able to persuade the Dongfang family to hand her over, would I still be waiting now? However, I have another

idea of how we can get rid of her..."

She then ignored the embarrassed-looking man and headed towards the elder's meeting room.

Lin Jun stood behind Rong Xin and clenched his fist as a cold light flashed maliciously from the corners of his eyes.

Rong Xin, do you think that you can humiliate me just because you're the Master of the Medicine Order? Don't forget that we are both ants on the same rope. If you continue to do this, don't blame me for exposing everything that you've done!

...

In the Elder's meeting room, everyone was whispering to each other and were deep in fervent discussion.

Suddenly, the door was pushed open and the chattering elders grew silent when they saw the couple entering the room.

Rong Xin's eyes looked calm and distant. Her white robes made her resemble a fairy who floated in the mist. The crowd watched as she walked in and her proud eyes scanned the entire room. She then stepped towards the seat at the front of the room, straightened her robes and sat down.

The handsome man who had walked in with her sat down right next to her.

"I'm sure that every elder here is aware of what I'm about to say." Rong Xin's expression was cold and distant with a hint of malice, "You're all aware of the event which had happened ten years ago. Over ten years ago, the old Order Master's favorite disciple, Wei Yiyi, had murdered him for the sake of the Treasury and escaped from punishment. However, not too long ago, I met her!"

Rustle!

Instantly, the elders dove into a sensation.

Wei Yiyi had escaped into the world outside and has been evading

her punishment for so many years. Despite their best efforts, the Medicine Order had been unable to locate her whereabouts! They never expected her to show herself at this point in time.

Of course, as Rong Xin spoke, a few elders from the older generation furrowed their brows with dissatisfaction.

"Order Master, during the old Order Master's death, there was no proof to say that Wei Yiyi was actually behind the murder. The Order Master had always loved her so dearly, why would she have done such a thing?"

"Elder Tianli is right, Wei Yiyi had no reason to murder the old Order Master. She was already going to inherit the Treasury of Medicine so why would she want to kill him?"

## Chapter 727: Shifting The Blame (3)

---

The ones who had spoken up were elders who had followed the old Order Master many years before and were also the people whom the old Order Master had trusted the most. As such, they refused to believe that Wei Yiyi would kill the old Order Master. She simply did not have a reason to have done so.

Rong Xin smiled coldly and a chilly glint flashed in the corner of her eyes, "Lin Jun had witnessed all of this himself. At that time, Lin Jun was Wei Yiyi's fiancé. He has no reason to frame Wei Yiyi. Since he had seen it happen with his own eyes, it's definitely verified."

"That's right."

Hearing this, the handsome man next to Rong Xin nodded. A vicious light flashed in his eyes, "I had witnessed it with my own eyes, Wei Yiyi had taken advantage of the old Order Master's trust in her and poisoned him. At that time, I myself found it hard to believe that Wei Yiyi would do such a thing. The reality of it all was that looks are deceiving, she was actually a vicious and merciless woman! Not even death can wipe out the crimes of a woman like her. She had murdered the old Order Master who once loved her so much. Can she even be considered human?"

Wei Yiyi, don't blame me for being cruel. I'm a man and men have needs! I was unable to resist the seduction of another female disciple and had relations with her. However, you had wanted to report the incident to the old Order Master and threatened to cancel our engagement.

The old Order Master loved you so much that if he had found out about it, he would have chased me out of the Medicine Order!

So, during that year, I did everything I could to attract Rong Xin's attention and managed to form an alliance with the wildly ambitious woman. Not only did we manage to poison the old Order

Master, we also framed you for it! It's your fault for being so naive about men and wanting to be the only woman for me for the rest of my life! That's simply an idiot's dream! What man wouldn't want to have three wives and four concubines?

So what if you're the Master of the Medicine Order's favorite disciple? You're a woman and at the end of the day, as a woman, you should turn a blind eye to a man's relationships with other women!

The malice in Lin Jun's eyes deepened as he recalled the past events.

He never considered himself to be in the wrong, to him. To him, Wei Yiyi was the only one at fault!

Bang!

At the seat of the elders, an elder dressed in white slammed the table and stood up as he glared angrily at Lin Jun, "Lin Jun, don't think that we're all ignorant of what you've been doing over the past few years! How many impure acts have you committed with the many female disciples of the Medicine Order? When some female disciples had been unwilling, you forced them and had your way with them! We chose not to hold it against you for the Order Master's sake but you've not been satisfied with small gains! Honestly, all these years, I've never believed a word you've said! Now, I'm going to find Wei Yiyi. I want to hear her personal explanation before I decide what to believe in!"

Rustle, rustle, rustle!

As the elder walked out the door, a few elders from the older generation also rose from their seats. They joined their fists and bowed at Rong Xin before making their way out.

The Order Master and Wei Yiyi had shared a sisterhood in the Medicine Order yet, in the end, she had become skeptical of her senior sister who had been as close to her as her own true born

sister since childhood, all because of a man! This was simply too disappointing. They had remained in the Medicine Order all these years because they had wanted to find justice for the death of their previous Order Master.

At this rate, Wei Yiyi was their only hope!

She would definitely know the true story behind the old Order Master's death. Only then could they expose Lin Jun's true agenda to the eyes of the Order Master!

"Men, stop them!"

Lin Jun's expression darkened as he issued the order icily.

Instantly, the rest of the elders rose to their feet and ran after the old men who had been heading towards the door of the elders' meeting room. They reached the doorway instantly and blocked their way out.

## Chapter 728: Shifting The Blame (4)

---

"Something terrible has happened! Order Master, something terrible has happened!"

Suddenly, an anxious voice sounded from further up front. Before anyone could regain their senses, a figure ran in and spoke as they huffed and puffed for breath, "Order Master, elders, please save my Master!"

It was a young girl with pure and delicate features. She looks to be around fifteen to sixteen years of age. However, her entire head was drenched with sweat, her face was pale and large beads of sweat were rolling down from her forehead. Her eyes were filled with terror and an undeniable anxiety.

The elders' hearts sank.

They knew the young girl before them!

This young girl was Nan Xiao's disciple. Based on her report, this means that something has happened to Nan Xiao!

However, Nan Xiao was the old Order Master's only daughter! Who would have had the gall to harm the old Order Master's only daughter?!

"What happened?"

A light flashed in Rong Xin's eyes as she asked.

"Elders, my Master has been kidnapped. Please save her."

The young girl was weeping bitterly, it was hard not to feel pity for her and everyone present felt a tug at their heartstrings. After hearing her words, they also began to feel extremely worried.

"Who would have the audacity to even dare touch Junior Sister Nan Xiao?!" Rong Xin hid the emotions on her face and rose to her feet fiercely. She spoke with a cold look in her eyes, "Tell me, who was the culprit? Who would completely ignore the Medicine Order

this way!"

At this moment, the young girl lowered her head and as such, no one noticed the brief flash of guilt and remorse in her eyes.

"It was Wei Yiyi. I had previously crossed paths with her when I had followed the Order Master to the Amethyst Underworld Palace. She has taken my Master away and wants to force the Order Master to give her the Medicine Order. Otherwise, she's going to kill my Master."

A wave of complicated emotions flashed in the young girl's eyes. When she raised her gaze, her eyes were once again filled with tears and anxiety.

"Elders, Lord Order Master, you must save my Master."

Master, I'm so sorry. Please forgive me this one time because I have no other choice.

If you were ever in danger, Master, I would definitely offer up my life but the lord Order Master has kidnapped my parents so I have no choice but to listen to her. Even though my parents had abandoned me when I was a child and it was you, Master, who had raised me, they were the ones who had given birth to me.

In my heart, my parents are the most important of all. Even my Master who had raised me can't be compared to them.

The young girl bit her lip as tears blurred her vision. When she looked at Rong Xin, a clear sense of terror was displayed on her face but it slowly dissipated.

For her parents' sake, she had to violate her conscience just this once!

"This Wei Yiyi is simply an ingrate!" Lin Jun's face turned ashen in anger, "The old Order Master had treated her like his own daughter and not only had she murdered him, for the sake of obtaining the seat of the Master of the Medicine Order, she would not even spare the old Order Master's daughter! Junior Sister Nan



Xiao had always treated her well in the past and this is how she repays her? She's worst than an animal!"

"Why would Wei Yiyi possibly want to harm Nan Xiao?"

The elders from the older generation still refused to believe it. Knowing Wei Yiyi, she would never do such a thing.

"You don't believe it?" Lin Jun sneered, "Do you not understand the logic behind the phrase 'one may know a person for a long time without understanding their true nature'? Elder Tianli, I know that Wei Yiyi had been in the Medicine Order since a very young age and you had raised her to adulthood, this matter has been reported by Junior Sister Nan Xiao's own disciple. This has nothing to do with me. This little disciple was once saved by Junior Sister herself, why would she tell a lie?"

## Chapter 729: Shifting The Blame (5)

---

Lin Jun was right. Once, Nan Xiao had run into danger and if it had not been for this little girl who had taken a knife for her, Nan Xiao would have ended up with a pretty heavy wound. It was for this very reason that Nan Xiao favored her even more.

If Lin Jun had been the one to make these claims, no one would ever have believed it.

Nan Xiao could also be considered as this little girl's surrogate mother so why would she discard her own Master's life for someone who had done nothing wrong to her?

This was impossible!

As such, the elders who had been demanding to see Wei Yiyi were silenced, unsure of what to think.

Rong Xin laughed coldly, "Now you should all know that my husband had been right! Wei Yiyi is truly a malicious villain! However, Wei Yiyi is currently under the Dongfang family's protection. We can't defeat her with our current level of power. As such, I've decided to merge the Medicine Order with the Immortal Realm! Only the Immortal Realm can aid us in our revenge!"

"What?"

Hearing this, the elders were shocked. Ever since Rong Xin had taken over the Medicine Order, she had been trying to curry favor from the Immortal Realm. However, if the Medicine Order was to merge with the Immortal Realm, they would no longer have their freedom from then on.

This was not an outcome they wished to have at all.

"No, I reject this. The old Order Master had taken great pains to develop the Medicine Order independently. How can we now join another organization? I don't agree with this!"

"Elder Tianli, do you not want to save Nan Xiao?"

A light flashed in Rong Xin's eyes. She knew that if she proposed for them to join the Immortal Realm straightaway, she would be stopped by these old fellows.

Hence, she plotted against Nan Xiao and shifted the blame to Wei Yiyi. Only then would she be able to convince them.

"Junior Sister Nan Xiao is Master's only remaining blood relation. Even if you don't want to save her, I won't give up! Do you think I actually want to demote myself from an Order Master to the subordinate of another? All of this is for Junior Sister Nan Xiao's sake! Master has shown me such great kindness, how could I kick my benefactor in the teeth like Wei Yiyi? I'll bring Nan Xiao back alive even if I have to give up my own life!"

The elders fell silent once again when they heard this.

Indeed, nothing else matters more than Nan Xiao's life right now even if it means giving up the entire Medicine Order.

So, in the end, Elder Tianli lowered his head and muttered begrudgingly, "All shall be left to your decision, Order Master."

Rong Xin slowly raised the corners of her lips as a sneer pierced through her eyes swiftly. See, Wei Yiyi? No matter how much these old fellows refuse to believe that you would commit such a sin, I have ways to make them believe me.

As for Nan Xiao...

She had been operating against me in the dark all these years so it's about time for her to disappear.

Don't worry, once you're dead, I'll have Nan Xiao keep you company in hell! It's her fault for having the audacity to let you off!

"Meeting adjourned." Rong Xin spat, saying nothing more at the thought of this.

She then exited the meeting room with a grin on her splendid

features. Clearly, she was in a pretty good mood today.

Lin Jun also remained silent. His eyes shifted from Rong Xin's disappearing figure to the trembling young girl kneeling on the ground. His eyes darkened.

Rong Xin is truly cruel!

She would not even spare her own Master and Junior Sister from her violent acts of treachery. I can't guarantee that she won't turn around and bite me viciously in the back one day. It looks like I'll need to be wary of this woman. Otherwise, I'll end up like the old Order Master, unaware of how I have ended up dead...

# Chapter 730: The War Of Gods And Demons

## (1)

---

The sun was setting in the west and the afterglow of twilight illuminated the whole of Dongfang City.

At this moment, outside the Dongfang household's gate, a figure drenched in blood fell to the ground with a loud thud. A white muslin had been draped over her face but now, even the white muslin has been stained red with blood. She pleaded in a frail and weak voice, "Please report to Lady Gu, tell her... Wu Yue of the Medicine Order requests for an audience."

The two guards at the door jumped in fright. They looked at each other before one of them hurried off to inform Gu Ruoyun.

In the blink of an eye, a figure dressed in green was led by the guard towards them, reaching Wu Yue in about three steps.

"Wu Yue!"

Gu Ruoyun was stunned and she furrowed her brows as she helped the woman on the ground to her feet. She then quickly gave her a pill, "What happened? What happened to you? Has something happened in the Medicine Order?" She asked.

"Cough, cough."

After swallowing the pill, Wu Yue's wounds healed rapidly. She coughed drily and raised her head towards Gu Ruoyun, "Lady Gu, something's happened to my Master. Is Senior Aunt Wei here?"

"Your Master? Nan Xiao?"

In truth, Gu Ruoyun had never met Nan Xiao in person. She only knew that she was Wei Yiyi's Junior Sister and was responsible for saving her life. Hence, she could not sit idly by and watch.

"It's not convenient here, let's talk inside."

Gu Ruoyun supported Wu Yue and walked towards the rear courtyard.

Normally, no one would disturb Gu Ruoyun in her quarters. As such, she released Wei Yiyi, who had been in the middle of cultivation, from Xiao Hei after closing her room's door.

At the sight of Wu Yue, Wei Yiyi hurriedly stepped forward. Her features were filled with anxiety as she asked, "Wu Yue, what on earth has happened?"

"Senior Aunt Wei."

Once she laid eyes on Wei Yiyi, Wu Yue could no longer contain herself. Tears streamed down her face as she sobbed, "It's Rong Xin. Rong Xin has wounded Master and taken her away. I risked my life to escape from under Master's protection! Senior Aunt, you must save my master. Rong Xin has long harbored a deep hatred for Master, she's certainly going to torture her to death!

Thud!

Wu Yue fell to her knees on the ground as she pled and cried incessantly.

"Get up, quickly." Wei Yiyi swiftly helped Wu Yue to her feet as rage flashed across her charming face, "I had initially intended to make my way to the Medicine Order a few days after but I didn't think that Rong Xin would be so quick to act against Junior Sister Nan Xiao! Wu Yue, don't worry, I won't desert your master!"

Wei Yiyi quickly turned around to look at Gu Ruoyun, "My powers are nearly at the ideal level so I'd like to make a trip to the Medicine Order. This trip is not only to make Rong Xin pay but I have to help Nan Xiao as well! Nan Xiao is my master's daughter and she had saved me once before. I can't remain idle while her life hangs in the balance!"

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded, "Let's go, I'll come with you to the Medicine Order."

"Master?" Wei Yiyi was mildly stunned.

She had mentioned to Gu Ruoyun before that she would have her revenge on Rong Xin one day. However, she never expected Gu Ruoyun to personally accompany her when she returned to the Medicine Order!

Wei Yiyi's heart filled with gratitude at the thought of this. This woman is the one who has changed my life.

"A few days ago, my elder brother sent a letter from the Spirit Sect. The war between the demons and the mainland will begin in a few days time. They will be meeting at the Battlefield of Gods and Demons and has asked me to begin my journey there as soon as possible! In order to reach the Battlefield of Gods and Demons, I'll have to journey pass the Medicine Order. We should get this over and done with as soon as possible. This is the reason why I've decided to come along with you."

# Chapter 731: The War Of Gods And Demons

## (2)

---

"Alright."

Wei Yiyi nodded, "Should we leave now?"

"I'll say goodbye to my Maternal Grandfather and Grandmother first before meeting you at the Medicine Order."

Gu Ruoyun gently stroked her chin. Once these two matters are resolved, I should head to the East Peak Mainland after.

She did not delay at the thought of this and after saying goodbye to Master Dongfang and the others, she too headed towards the Medicine Order. Unfortunately, Gu Ruoyun and her party members had been one step too late. When they arrived in the Medicine Order, they found out that all the powerful figures of the Medicine Order had been transferred to the Immortal Realm!

In her rage, Wei Yiyi felt the urge to burn down the entire Medicine Order. In the end, however, she could not bear to let her old Order Master's hard work go to waste. Hence, she only destroyed the villainous Rong Xin and Lin Jun's room.

They then headed towards the Battlefield of Gods and Demons.

Since Rong Xin has joined the Immortal Realm, she would definitely make an appearance in the Demon War.

Just as they were rushing towards the Battlefield of Gods and Demons, the Immortal Realm suddenly issued a summons! It raised a powerful sensation on this mainland.

In order to defeat the demons, the Immortal Realm has called for a widespread meeting with the cultivators of the world. Regardless of whether one was weak or strong, as long as one joins the Immortal Realm, they can help push one to their strongest potential immediately. As such, countless people had flocked to the



Immortal Realm all for the sake of obtaining that strong power.

Some of them held a grudge against the Dongfang family's power so they had joined the Immortal Realm without hesitation, hoping to use the Immortal Realm's power to help them stand up against the Dongfang family!

Meanwhile, in a dark room within the Immortal Realm, a voice sounded from the communications talisman in the Immortal Master's hands. The normally haughty Immortal Master's head was now bowed. Anybody's jaws would have dropped at his uncommon display of reverence.

"I'll give you an extension once again, bring that kid Gu Shengxiao to me. As for that little sister of his, she seems to be pretty talented so bring her to me as well! I don't have any desire for you to end up like the Gu family — useless to the core!"

If Second Master Gu, who was also Gu Ruoyun's uncle, had still been alive, he would definitely recognize that voice for it belonged to the person he had once helped to get rid of Gu Tian.

"My Lord, please, give me a little more time. Gu Shengxiao has already broken through to the rank of a high-level Martial Honor, it would be difficult to capture him now." The Immortal Master's tone of voice remained respectful and also carried a hint of flattery. It was hard to believe that this was the number one cultivator in the mainland, the Master of the Immortal Realm!

"Hmph! Stop giving me so many excuses! If it wasn't for the fact that I'm temporarily unable to make the journey here from the East Peak Mainland, Gu Shengxiao would have long become a part of my organs!" The voice was filled with anger, "That spineless wimp from the Gu family had caused me a lot of harm and brought me into this wretched state! Gu Tian was still alive and he had dared to lie to me by telling me Gu Tian had been murdered! However, not only is Gu Tian still alive, he has built a great organization and has been opposing me ever since! You'd better

give me the Gu siblings soon! Otherwise, I will take your life away immediately!"

The Immortal Master's body trembled. He bowed and replied with a low voice, "Please don't worry, my Lord, I won't let you down. I'm now utilizing your method to help many people increase their powers. Now, the Gu siblings are no match for me."

"Hmph," That person scoffed and spoke coldly, "I hope it turns out that way. You'd better not be like Gu Tian's spineless little brother who had the audacity to lie to me! Fortunately, he's dead. Otherwise, I would grant him a fate worse than death. This is the price for deceiving me!"

# Chapter 732: The War Of Gods And Demons

## (3)

---

Once he finished speaking, the man cut off their connection.

The Immortal Master wiped the cold sweat from his forehead and heaved a sigh of relief, "It seems that I must absolutely capture the Gu siblings. Otherwise, if I provoke this Lord, my life would be forfeit. However, the Gu siblings are cunning so I can only attack them during the Demon War."

A cold light flashed across his eyes and the Immortal Master regained his usual haughty and cold demeanor. He then left the room.

The War of Gods and Demons was an event which recurs every ten years.

It was said that the demons occupy a small area on the mainland with an impassable cliff. Not even Martial Emperors could fly across it! As such, under normal circumstances, the demons would also be unable to leave the area.

However, every ten years, a movement would occur once at that section.

Because of that movement, the cliff which prevented them from crossing the land would disappear and they would be connected to the world outside. Each time that happens, the demons would attack the citizens of the mainland in an attempt to take over.

One should not underestimate the demons just because their numbers seem small. In actual fact, the demon's reproduction rate was extremely shocking. However, if a demon wishes to increase their powers, they would need to feed on their own kind! Hence, those who manage to survive under these natural laws of elimination were the best of the best!

At this moment, on a mountain peak not too far away from the

Battlefield of Gods and Demons, countless tents had been set up overnight. From a distance, one could see a densely packed clump.

"Little girl, you've arrived?"

The Honorable Sir Tianqi recognized Gu Ruoyun who had been approaching them from a distance away. His eyes shone as he hurriedly stepped forward, "Ah, right. Where are the forces you command? I've heard the sensation that you've caused! Tsk, tsk. I don't know how you've managed to make so many Martial Honors submit to you."

Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders and smiled.

Just then, she clearly noticed a sneaky figure amongst the team from the Spirit Sect and her eyes flashed with a cold light.

The Honorable Sir Lingshang clearly felt her gaze and trembled. He quickly hid in the crowd and disappeared from view.

Previously, he had tipped the Immortal Realm off on Gu Ruoyun's movements in an attempt to secretly get rid of her. At that time, he had run into something at the last minute and was unable to follow the members of the Immortal Realm to the front. When he had finished with whatever he had on hand and rushed over, all he saw was a ground littered with dead bodies.

Of course, Gu Ruoyun was not amongst the dead! They were all the bodies of the disciples of the Immortal Realm with his own disciple amongst them as well.

Instantly, the Honorable Sir Lingshang was dazed with shock. There were many strong cultivators in the Immortal Realm so how could it be possible that they had been unable to defeat one woman? Nevertheless, the reality of it all has proven this point! When he heard of what had happened at Lan Yuge's birthday celebration, he was completely dumbfounded.

He could never have imagined that Gu Ruoyun would have such powerful forces under her command.

Regardless of the shock, the Honorable Sir Lingshang's hatred towards Gu Ruoyun had not diminished. On the contrary, it deepened.

His hatred had grown for no other reason than the fact that this woman had killed his disciple!

Kun Nan was his favorite disciple and regardless of whether he had committed a hundred crimes, he should never have been punished with death! This cruel woman had given him such a horrifying end!

So, whenever the chance comes, I must kill this woman and destroy any chance of a proper burial for her corpse!

A malicious light flitted across his eyes as the Honorable Sir Lingshang clenched his fist. He took a deep breath in order to contain himself from the urge to cause trouble for Gu Ruoyun.

His disciple had ended up dead due to his brashness, he would not make the same mistake.

# Chapter 733: The War Of Gods And Demons

## (4)

---

I won't attack her unless I'm absolutely sure of my success! Otherwise, forget about revenge, I will end up dead as well!

"Gu Ruoyun, I've never met anyone as cruel as you in my entire life! Just you wait, soon I'll send you to hell to keep my disciple company and say your apologies to him!" The Honorable Sir Lingshang turned back from within the crowd and took another look at Gu Ruoyun before disappearing under the rays of the setting sun.

The Honorable Sir Tianqi sensed Gu Ruoyun's gaze and trailed her line of sight towards the Honorable Sir Lingshang's disappearing figure, "Don't bother yourself with that old fart. Wait for me to find some information to use against him, I'll definitely have him kicked out of the Spirit Sect! Furthermore, I'm now the number one elder in the Spirit Sect so he can't control me. By the way, little girl, did you know that the old fart's disciple is dead? Hahaha, this is such joyous news. That kid has always tried to harm Shengxiao. He should have been killed long ago."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi felt a great urge to laugh out loud at the thought of this.

Gu Ruoyun rubbed her nose. She dearly wished to tell this old man that it was Qianbei Ye who was responsible for Kun Nan's death.

"Oh, right. When will the battle begin?"

"Very soon," The Honorable Sir Tianqi smiled, "If my calculation on the timing is accurate, it should take place within the next few days. The demons will make their way here within a few days and our responsibility is to stop them from entering the mainland! Otherwise, knowing the demons' mercilessness, the entire

mainland will suffer a calamity. By the way, where is that silver-haired man who's always following you around? Why is he not with you this time?"

As he spoke, the Honorable Sir Tianqi glanced towards the space behind Gu Ruoyun but did not see that red-robed and silver-haired figure.

Gu Ruoyun smiled serenely and replied, "Xiao Ye has more pressing matters to attend to. Besides, he does not need to make an appearance in this battle."

Once this battle ends, she would need to make her way to the East Peak Mainland. Qianbei Ye has gone to the East Peak Mainland first for her sake. This was to ensure that once she enters the East Peak Mainland, there would be a powerful force there to protect her.

As such, he has left to build an organization before her arrival...

If Gu Ruoyun was to say that she did not feel touched by this gesture, that would be a lie. This man has already done everything in his power for her yet he has never once complained.

"Little girl, let's go. Shengxiao has been waiting for you for a very long time."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi recollected his thoughts and spoke to Gu Ruoyun.

Gu Ruoyun nodded, "Let's go meet my brother now."

She said nothing more and followed the Honorable Sir Tianqi towards a tent.

Gu Shengxiao, who was in the middle of a discussion with the Spirit Sect's Master in the tent, noticed Gu Ruoyun walking in with the Honorable Sir Tianqi from the corner of his eye. His grim features lit up with joy and he quickly rose to his feet, reaching her side in just a few steps. His originally cold and grim features softened. His eyes, which were as dark as the night, looked as if

they could drown a person.

"Yun'er, you're here?"

At this moment, his eyes only saw this woman in green before him and completely ignored the Honorable Sir Tianqi who was walking right in front of him.

"Ahem."

The Sect Master cleared his throat and a small smile appeared on his cold and stern face, "Lady Gu, why have you come here on your own? Where are your subordinates?"

Prior to this, the Sect Master had received news of the events which had happened during Lan Yuge's birthday celebration.

This young woman had built such a large organization all on her own! Even the spiritual beasts of the entire mainland have surrendered to her!



# Chapter 734: The War Of Gods And Demons

## (5)

---

Just the large number of spiritual beasts alone would be enough to crush the humans to death! Even the Master of the Spirit Sect, a member of the Three Great Authorities, has no choice but to pay heed to the power in her hand!

Furthermore, this woman was truly extraordinary!

Luckily, he does not have any disagreements with this extraordinary person. Otherwise, his loss would not be limited to his highly-favored Gu Shengxiao. Even he would be trampled and flattened to the ground by the countless spiritual beasts!

At this point in time, no matter how powerful he has become, he was only a general without an army! How could he stand on the same level as the Immortal Realm and the Courts of Hell?

Hearing the Sect Master's words, Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly. Her clear and cold eyes remained serene and steady, "I've merely arrived early, the Dongfang family will be here very soon."

She did not elaborate further on the other forces under her command.

After all, she does not have a good impression of the Spirit Sect's Master. If it had not been for the sake of Gu Shengxiao and the Honorable Sir Tianqi, she would not have bothered to even speak with him.

The Sect Master was about to say something else but he could tell that Gu Ruoyun has no interest in chatting with him so he swallowed his words, anxious at the uncomfortable feeling.

"Yun'er, you must be tired. I've prepared a tent for you so go and get some rest. It's best to conserve your energy right now because the demons won't be so easily defeated. Don't you worry, I'll protect you."

The man's cold features displayed a sense of resolution as he spoke. Mother and Father have passed on, my sister is the only hope I have left in this world.

...

At the foot of the mountain.

A group of people were making their way up the mountain.

The leader of the group was a delicately handsome youth whose green robes fluttered in the wind. His eyes were clear and limpid, shining like pools of perfect and pure water.

"Sir Xia, how much longer will our journey be?"

Linlang wiped the sweat from her brow and turned towards the handsome youth in front of her. After a bit of hesitation, she had opened her mouth to ask the question.

Previously, Gu Ruoyun had decided to head towards the battlefield on her own first after receiving the sudden news. She had then asked Xia Linyu to lead the members of the Dongfang family towards the battlefield! The fight against the demons was also a rare opportunity for them to level up.

Hence, any young Martial King disciples have the opportunity to make their way towards the Battlefield of Gods and Demons!

Whenever Gu Ruoyun's name was mentioned, Linlang's heart would fill with gratitude.

She could still remember the woman's words to her during the Divine Trials.

Gu Ruoyun had said that one day, she would make the Gu family personally return her parents back to the Dongfang family!

The Gu family has actually done that! Of course, if it had not been for Gu Ruoyun's words, she might never have been reunited with her parents in this lifetime!

"Watch out!"

Suddenly, Xia Linyu's delicate features sank and his clear eyes flashed with vigilance. He knit his attractive brows tightly and his voice, as clear as spring water, rang throughout the silent mountain range.

"Who's there?"

"Haha."

The sound of loud laughter appeared from thin air.

The Dongfang family disciples' faces grew nervous. They anxiously clutched their swords and stared fully alert at the place where that voice had come from.

Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh!

Suddenly, countless figures appeared. They charged down from thin air and shot towards them like piercing rays of light. These figures crashed down before their very eyes, completely surrounding the members of the Dongfang family.

# Chapter 735: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath (1)

---

"It's the Lin family, the Chai family, the Green Mountain Faction, and... the members of the Medicine Order!"

Linglang's expression changed greatly, "How can this be? How is it possible for these people to have leveled up so much in such a short time? They're mostly at the rank of high-level Martial Emperors! One of them is even a Martial Honor! As I recall, they were never as strong as this."

What on earth had happened for them to become so powerful?

"Members of the Dongfang family, you have no right to enter this place!"

A figure appeared from within the group. He was an elder dressed in grey robes with a sneer on his face and he looked insufferably arrogant, "No one is allowed to enter without the Immortal Realm's permission! You could join the Immortal Realm like us but this is obviously not possible! Furthermore... It's the Dongfang family's fault for producing someone like Gu Ruoyun. We serve the Immortal Realm's commands and that is to kill everyone in the Dongfang family! You have only yourself to blame for not adapting to the circumstances."

The grey-robed elder paused before continuing, "I'm sure you must all be wondering how we've become so powerful? Haha, our opportunity was bestowed upon us by the Dongfang family! During Lan Yuge's birthday celebration, we, the guests, had been kicked out by you, the Dongfang family who were the hosts. After that, we formed an alliance and joined the Immortal Realm together! It was because of the Immortal Realm that we have managed to become so powerful! Today marks the day of destruction for the Dongfang family!"

As he spoke, everyone took a few steps forward towards them, allowing their strong aura to erupt. The grey-robed elder, who was

their leader, let out the full force of his powers as a Martial Honor, instantly raising a hurricane from around him.

Xia Linyu did not hesitate as he retaliated immediately!

He unsheathed the green sword that hung from his waist. The light within the green sword flashed, bursting forth with such brilliance that everyone could not help but raise their hands to shield their eyes.

Just as they were attempting to shade their eyes from the sword's brilliance, Xia Linyu was already in front of them.

Whoosh!

The sharp end of the sword pierced towards the grey-robed elder. In that instant, the grey-robed elder moved swiftly and quickly drew his weapon to block the attack.

Crash!

Their weapons clashed with a sharp noise. Xia Linyu immediately felt a numbness on the web between his thumb and forefinger. He nearly spat out a mouthful of blood but he forcibly swallowed it all when it reached his lips.

He stumbled back and his delicate features looked very serious.

"A spiritual weapon?"

The grey-robed elder was mildly shocked. He waved his numb hand and suddenly laughed, "How interesting, this little fellow has a spiritual weapon in his possession. However, this spiritual weapon would only be tainted by your hands. Why not give it to us? Hahaha."

Boom!

Suddenly, Xia Linyu swung his longsword and a wave of light from the sword immediately pierced through the ground. Instantly, a dust storm formed and covered everyone's vision.

"Go, hurry up and leave!"

Linlang and the rest were astonished, "Sir Xia, what about you..."

"I'll hold them off. The rest of you, go!"

Big Sister had entrusted these people to me before she left so no matter what, I must protect their lives.

"I may be able to deal with them on my own. You'll only drag me down if you stay so hurry, go and find my sister!"

Linlang bit her lips and hardened her heart before turning around and running as fast as she could.

Upon seeing this, the rest hurriedly ran off as well. They turned back to glance at Xia Linyu before they left.

Even though they had been unwilling to leave, they knew very well that based on their powers as Martial Kings, they would only be a burden if they had remained. They would end up dragging Sir Xia if he has to protect them! The only thing they could do now was to find Lady Gu!

## Chapter 736: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath (2)

---

"Hmph, you're overestimating yourself!"

The elder in grey sneered before he disregarded the dust-filled air and charged forward. However, just as he took two steps forward, a green figure suddenly appeared in front of him.

Amidst the smoke and dust, it was difficult to make out the youth's features. Nevertheless, his voice was soft and pure yet filled with courage all the same.

"Do you not have something against the Dongfang family? What's the use in going up against a few powerless disciples? I, Xia Linyu, am Gu Ruoyun's little brother and her most important relative! Why don't you forget about chasing after them and use all of your powers to defeat me? How about that?"

As the smoke and dust slowly cleared, the youth's features became clearer but he did not look raggedy at all. His delicate features were very clean while his eyes were clear, limpid and moving.

The elder in grey burst into laughter, "Kid, you're giving yourself up out of stupidity! That's right, those people were clearly the Dongfang family disciples! Killing them, however, doesn't seem to change anything! The powers of the Dongfang family are at this stage because of that sl\*t Gu Ruoyun! As her little brother, you're certainly more useful than the rest. I'm going to kill you first so that she would suffer an extreme amount of grief. Only after that would I go after the remaining Dongfang family disciples. Hahaha!"

The elder laughed and charged towards Xia Linyu. At the same time, everyone else also reacted and moved to attack the delicate-looking youth.

The sun was setting in the west.

The stench of blood filled the entire mountain range.

Xia Linyu had lost track of time. His entire body felt drained of energy and he was close to collapsing from exhaustion. This time, the attackers were not only powerful, they had come in a large number as well. While he has had a substantial upgrade in his ability, it was still extremely difficult to hold his own against all of them even with the help of his spiritual weapon and pills.

At this point in time, the youth's green robes had been dyed red with blood. The space between his brows had lost its initial clarity. His face was extremely pale and his body was riddled with wounds which dripped with blood continuously.

No!

This won't do!

I must not fall! I have to kill them all so I can't give up just yet!

Xia Linyu forced himself to crawl to his feet. However, just as he tried to stand up, his knees gave way and he nearly fell to the ground once again.

"Damned brat, I didn't think that you'd end up being so powerful despite your young age. You've managed to survive our combined attacks and you've even killed so many of us!" The grey-robed elder's expression was extremely horrifying. He sneered as he continued, "But to what end? You've sustained so many heavy injuries. I reckon that you won't be able to live past the day so let me send you off now! Brat, your powers really aren't bad and you had the help of a spiritual weapon. Unfortunately, I'm a Martial Honor. Your powers are still pretty far off when compared to mine."

Nevertheless, this brat has not only retaliated so stubbornly, he's even managed to kill so many of us! Now, he has pretty much killed everyone else except for me! This is too humiliating!

I won't let him die so easily! I won't go easy on this damned brat.



"Cough, cough."

Xia Linyu coughed and spat out a mouthful of blood. He then took out a pill and swallowed it.

In the beginning, the effects from his pill usage were obvious as his injuries were healed almost instantaneously! Otherwise, he would not have been able to withstand so many attacks for such a long time. However, pill benefits have their limit and one can only take ten Curing Pills in a day. With ten of these, one could heal very quickly.

## Chapter 737: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath (3)

---

After ten pills, the effects of the pill would become slower.

Xia Linyu had lost track of the number of pills he had consumed.

"You're still trying to fight back?" The elder in grey laughed mockingly as he saw the young man grabbing his sword. Xia Linyu then charged towards him once again. The elder raised his hand and gripped Xia Linyu's arm with ease as he spoke with disdain, "Kid, I advise you to give up! You are no match for me! However, don't you worry, I won't let you die so soon! Did you not mention that Gu Ruoyun is your older sister? This means that you must be very important to her. That woman had previously destroyed our organization, how could I ever let her off so easily?"

"So, I'm going to use you to threaten her. She must love you so much that she would disregard everything for your sake! When that time comes, I'll make her tear off her clothes and suffer unbearable humiliation so that she would no longer be able to continue living. Haha!"

Xia Linyu's eyes darkened as rage flashed in his eyes, "Say that one more time!"

"I said, I want Gu Ruoyun to die of the humiliation in front of the world! As long as you're in my hands, I need not fear her retaliation. Besides, the lord Immortal Master already harbors a deep hatred towards her, how could he possibly let her off so easily? Hahaha! By then, she will surely suffer a horrifying death!"

As he spoke, the elder in grey gritted his teeth hatefully.

It was all Gu Ruoyun's fault.

The Dongfang family, who had been previously bullied by us, had managed to rise up because of this woman! If it had not been for her, the hierarchy of power on this mainland would not have turned out this way! Also, I would never forget how this woman

had coldly chased all of us out during Lan Yuge's birthday celebration!

"If you dare to lay a hand on my sister, I will never forgive you!"

Xia Linyu's entire body trembled and his delicate features were now filled with rage. He looked as if he could swallow a person whole as he glared at the grey-robed elder.

"Never forgive me? Tsk, tsk. You're now a fallen general in my hands. How do you plan to get your revenge? Kill me if you can but do you have the ability? Try to pull your arm out of my grasp, can you even do that?"

The grey-robed elder burst into laughter as he drove the grip of his fingers deeper into Xia Linyu's arm. His fingernails left obvious indents on the youth's arm.

Fresh blood began to trickle down and soon, his entire arm was drenched with blood.

However, the grey-robed elder's smile suddenly froze in place...

Before he could react, the youth had pulled a sword out from the air and chopped off the arm in the elder's grip! Blood began spewing out, drenching the elder's hand in a red stream...

The elder was stunned. He stared in astonishment at the young man's pale yet delicate features as his heart filled with horror.

He was thoroughly terrified by the youth's mercilessness!

In order to escape his shackles, he was willing to sacrifice his arm?

Why?

"I hate it most of all when others use me to threaten my sister! If you want that arm, I'll give it to you. I'll never fall into your hands and be used by you to threaten her."

The young man spoke slowly. His voice no longer held his previous youthful tenderness, it was now filled with terrifying

ferocity.

The elder was still holding on to the amputated arm. At this moment, he was still rather dumbfounded and has yet to return to his senses. Therefore, he failed to notice the green light glowing from the sword in the grip of the amputated arm.

Suddenly, the sword flew up in the air and pierced into the elder's chest, driving its blade straight through his back.

## Chapter 738: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath (4)

---

Splatter!

The elder shook and made a muffled sound as he stared in shock at the youth's delicate and pure features.

He simply could not understand it. For the sake of defeating his enemy, this young man would even resort to such cruel measures against himself?

Thud!

Xia Linyu's body could no longer take it and he crumpled heavily to the ground. Just as his body hit the ground, he noticed a familiar figure speeding towards him...

"Sister..."

The youth slowly closed his eyes. His lips were raised into a smile and he looked at ease and a little joyful.

Sister, I can finally help you to protect others.

At last, I'm no longer... Your burden...

"Yu'er!"

A heart-wrenching scream pierced through the skies and echoed through the entire mountain range.

Gu Ruoyun flew to Xia Linyu's side. When her eyes fell upon the bloodied youth, a raging flame burst from within her. That anger was enough to destroy the world.

"Immortal Realm! I, Gu Ruoyun, hereby swear that if I do not destroy you today, I can't be considered human!!!"

At this very moment, her heart was in severe agony. Scenes of her past life flashed in her mind's eye.

At that time, she had been unable to exact revenge and just as she wanted to use her soul to do it, Zixie had stopped her.

However, in this life, if anyone dares to lay a hand on her little brother, she would destroy their entire family! Not a single person would be left alive!

"Yu'er, don't worry, I won't let you die. I also won't allow anyone who has harmed you to continue to live!"

Gu Ruoyun slowly rose to her feet and held the blood-drenched youth closely to her chest. Her green robes were also stained red with his blood but she did not seem to notice it at all. She gently carried the youth and headed towards the battlefield.

...

When Gu Ruoyun stepped onto the field with the blood-drenched Xia Linyu, the entire battlefield went into a sensation.

She placed the youth on a bed and a cold light flashed in her eyes.

"Big Brother, I want the Immortal Realm to be annihilated!"

Gu Shengxiao shuddered before he patted Gu Ruoyun's shoulder comfortingly and said, "Yun'er, no matter what you do, you have my support."

"Thank you."

Gu Ruoyun's lips trembled softly, "I've given him a pill and that helped to stop the bleeding. However, Yu'er's wounds are far too severe and can't be healed in such a short time. So, Brother, may I trouble you to send someone to take care of him and help me make arrangements for the Dongfang family as well?"

At that time, she had been in the middle of cultivation in her room when Linlang and the rest had rushed in. She then found out about the Immortal Realm's scheme to kill the Dongfang family members at the foot of the mountain and she had rushed down the mountain at top speed.

At this moment, aside from an immeasurable rage, her heart was also filled with self-blame.

She blamed herself for her inability to protect Xia Linyu.

In truth, no one would have thought that the Immortal Realm, as a team joining the War of Gods and Demons, would have sent their underlings to commit murder! Not even Gu Ruoyun who has long been aware of the Immortal Realm's shamelessness had expected them to make their move at a time like this!

"Yun'er, you shouldn't blame yourself too much." Gu Shengxiao saw through Gu Ruoyun's remorse and gently stroked her shoulder, "His wounds are indeed heavy and if you had not been here, he would not have survived. The fact that you're able to save his life is a miracle. However, this arm..."

Gu Ruoyun's heart sank as she raised her head and looked out at the sky. Her clear and cold gaze was filled with murderous intent.

Gu Shengxiao said nothing more and walked out of the room.

"Little girl."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi entered and frowned, "Are you really planning to make the Immortal Realm pay now? The War of Gods and Demons is close at hand. I've heard that the demons this year are more powerful than before. At the end of the day, the Immortal Realm is still one of the most powerful forces on this mainland. Without them, our stakes in the battle would go down substantially. Why not wait until the end of the fight to get rid of them? After this battle, we would have another ten years to prepare for the next one."

## Chapter 739: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath (5)

---

Ten years!

He believes that within ten years, Gu Ruoyun's power would have expanded into unimaginable realms. By then, they would no longer need to worry about the demons.

"I've made my decision." Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "It's an insult to Yu'er if I allow anyone who had harmed him to remain alive for another second! I will no longer tolerate the existence of the Immortal Realm!"

She then said nothing more and stepped out. She soon disappeared from the Honorable Sir Tianqi's view.

The Honorable Sir Tianqi smiled bitterly in exasperation, "This little girl truly has a stubborn personality but regardless of her talents, the Immortal Master is a high-level Martial Honor. What's going to happen if she was unable to fight back?"

The Honorable Sir Tianqi threw the safety of the mainland to the back of his mind at the thought of this. Anxiety and nervousness began to fill his heart.

"No, I must follow her. This little girl's brashness might actually put her at the short end of the stick."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi deliberated for half a second before he rushed out to chase after her.

Boom!

Outside the Immortal Realm's assembly tent, a powerful force suddenly erupted towards them and destroyed the mansion-like tents. Countless Immortal Realm disciples scrambled out from the wreckage and looked at the culprit.

"Gu Ruoyun, what do you think you're doing?"

Rong Xin ran out, looking completely disheveled as she glared



angrily at Gu Ruoyun.

Gu Ruoyun merely glanced at her unfeelingly and smiled icily, "Rong Xin, I've yet to make you pay for everything you've done to Wei Yiyi. I didn't think that you would join forces with other organizations and try to harm the Dongfang family members! Also... Yu'er was seriously injured because of this!"

"You... What did you say?"

Anxiety flashed in Rong Xin's eyes as she calmed her emotions and said, "Gu Ruoyun, you're far too impudent. This is the Immortal Realm's territory, not a place for you to display your atrocious behavior."

In the past, Rong Xin would never have dared to speak to Gu Ruoyun in this manner.

However, now that I have the Immortal Realm's support, why should I continue to fear this woman?

What a joke!

"I've come to exact revenge from the Immortal Realm! Of course, this also includes all the organizations who have joined them as well!" Gu Ruoyun's face was enveloped in a cold light. Her clear, cold gaze was filled with murderous intent, "Now, bring the Master of the Immortal Realm to me!"

As Gu Ruoyun had stormed the Immortal Realm so suddenly, she has attracted quite a bit of an audience.

In addition to the fact that she was just seen carrying a blood-drenched youth back to the army camp, many could already guess what was going on.

However, none of them expected her to have the audacity to demand the Immortal Master to show himself!

"Gu Ruoyun, who do you think you are? What right do you have to demand the Immortal Master to see you? Dream on, we'll forget

about you standing here all alone. Even if you had displayed that organization under your command for all to see, you are still no match for the Immortal Master. As a human, you should know your place."

Seeing how Gu Ruoyun had arrived on her own, Rong Xin felt no fear.

"I'll say this once more, bring the Master of the Immortal Realm to me!" Gu Ruoyun's voice echoed through the clouds and resounded through the heavens, "Otherwise, I will kill every single member of the Immortal Realm!"

Rong Xin wanted to laugh.

Is this woman incapable of comprehending my words? She thinks she's a god! She dares to hurl insults at the Immortal Master and threaten him with killing everyone in the Immortal Realm! Who does she think she is? She has the audacity to talk a load of rubbish while she stands there alone? She's far too arrogant!

# Chapter 740: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (1)

---

Just as Rong Xin was about to curse out loud, her smile suddenly froze in place and she widened her eyes as if she had just seen a monster. Shock enveloped her eyes.

Gu Ruoyun, who had initially been on her own, was suddenly accompanied by numerous people and spiritual beasts who had appeared out of thin air. They surrounded the entire battlefield in a dense mass and each of them exuded a valiant stance.

This... What is this?

Where had all these people come from?

However, the most shocking of them all loomed from behind them...

The large Azure Dragon had appeared in the sky. He resembled a supreme ruler as he looked down imposingly on both the tiny humans and the spiritual beasts. The elegant White Tiger walked beneath him, her clear blue eyes filled with smiles.

Next to the White Tiger was the Black Tortoise with a long, snake-like tail. His eyes were extremely beautiful as well and his hard shell shone in the sunlight.

"These... Aren't they three of the Four Divine Spiritual Beasts - the Black Tortoise, the White Tiger and the Azure Dragon?"

Rong Xin was thoroughly shocked.

She has long heard the rumors of how Gu Ruoyun has both the Azure Dragon and the White Tiger on her side. Nevertheless, rumors were unsubstantiated so how could it be possible for the legendary spiritual beasts to appear beside her now? She never thought that those rumors could be true! These three Divine Spiritual Beasts look exactly as they had appeared in the ancient

paintings.

If the Vermillion Bird was in their midsts, she would have had all four Divine Spiritual Beasts.

"It's been awhile since I've come out. I can finally loosen up a little."

Yan yawned and blinked his eyes sleepily. A great invisible force then erupted, causing everyone's face to change.

"This is... a Martial Honor?"

Rong Xin bit her lip. This spiritual beast can turn into a human and is also at the rank of a Martial Honor with formidable powers!

However, she could not sense his exact rank.

"Kill all the members of the Immortal Realm!"

Gu Ruoyun slowly raised her head and murderous intent flashed in her eyes, "And hang their dead bodies for all to see!"

She was not satisfied with simply exterminating the Immortal Realm, she wanted to hang their corpses up for everyone to see.

She was not just exacting revenge on behalf of Xia Linyu, she was also ensuring that once she has left the West Spirit Mainland, no one on earth would dare to lay a hand on the people closest to her.

So what if I have to be vicious? So what if I have to be merciless?

If this was the only way for me to loved ones, I don't mind turning into a demon!

"You... What are you doing?"

Rong Xin finally felt fear. She stumbled back as she gritted her teeth and her face was drained of color, "Gu Ruoyun, I'm now a member of the Immortal Realm. So what if you have this many cultivators on your side? You're no match for the Immortal Realm!"

Gu Ruoyun did not seem to hear her words. After she had given

her orders, she did not even look at Rong Xin. Instead, she calmly instructed, "Aside from the members of the Medicine Order, kill everyone else!"

She has no intentions of sparing the Medicine Order. Instead... They would be given to Wei Yiyi who would then handle them — personally.

"As you command!"

Her subordinates replied in unison. Their crisp and clear voices echoed throughout the battlefield.

The Honorable Sir Tianqi stood behind the crowd as he observed Gu Ruoyun's actions. He smiled bitterly and sighed, "It seems that this time, the little girl has finally made her decision. Since that's the case, I can only follow her wishes. The Immortal Realm's idiocy is to blame for this. They clearly knew that the battle with the demons would be launched soon yet they still resorted to resolve their private grievances in public by trying to murder the members of the Dongfang family. Because of that, even if they are exterminated, one might say that they're stewing in their own juice!"

# Chapter 741: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (2)

---

Gu Ruoyun has a natural disposition to not tolerate troublemakers. This was not something the Immortal Realm was aware of yet still, they had insisted on doing something like this.

So, you can't really blame this little girl for her brashness in charging towards the Immortal Realm.

At the land around the battlefield.

The countless organizations in the vicinity were discussing the situation in lowered voices as they focused on the battle between the two sides which has blown up before them.

However, they all had the opinion that things would end miserably for Gu Ruoyun!

Regardless of how much her powers have grown, the Master of the Immortal Realm was still a high-level Martial Honor after all. How could she even be a match for him?

"Stop!"

Boom!

Just as the battle was becoming more intense, an enraged voice burst through space.

A figure in white slowly came into view. The man's icy features held an irrepressible anger.

"Gu Ruoyun, what do you think you're doing?"

The Immortal Master grit his teeth as he glared angrily at the young woman beneath him.

I had just left for a minute only to witness this woman killing my own disciples when I had returned! She's simply an intolerable bully! Even when hitting a dog, one should look at its master. She

has massacred so many of my people in front of everyone's eyes, does she not place any significance on my position at all?

This was clearly an insult meant for me!

"Ignore him." Gu Ruoyun glanced at the Immortal Master and continued to issue her orders, "Continue to kill them all!"

"Impudence!"

A murderous intent flashed in the Immortal Master's eyes. He charged towards her in anger as he gathered all the energy in his body onto the palm of his hand and aimed it at Gu Ruoyun's head.

To a lot of witnesses, that one blow from the Immortal Master would certainly split Gu Ruoyun's head in half and she would die tragically.

However...

Just as the Immortal Master's hand was about to land on Gu Ruoyun's head, she backed away as if she had grown eyes on top of her head. She then raised her hand and retaliated against his attack...

Boom!

A powerful fluctuation burst between the two. Their robes were destroyed by the sheer force of it all, rendering them torn and tattered.

Gu Ruoyun felt a numbness in the palm of her hand. She was in a dangerous situation but she retracted her hand which had no trace of a wound. She gently swung it around as she glared icily at the Immortal Master.

"Gu Ruoyun, you have far too much audacity. You would even dare to cross the Immortal Realm! Could it be that you're completely deluded on thinking that it would be easy to abuse the Immortal Master?" The Immortal Master's chest burned with a fiery rage, he dearly wished that he could tear the woman in front

of him to pieces.

"The Immortal Realm had sent their underlings to kill the Dongfang family disciples and severely wounded my close relative. So, from this day forth, the Immortal Realm must cease to exist."

The woman's voice was cool and calm yet it felt like a heavy weight as it slammed into the hearts of many.

"Hahaha!"

The Immortal Master roared with laughter. He spat angrily as he replied ferociously, "So what if you kill them all? Gu Ruoyun, do you really think that you could consider everyone to be beneath you just because you have great talent? Forget about killing them, even your life will soon be taken away by me! If they actually die, it'll be their fault for being inferior. What does that have to do with me?"

"Those who are lacking in power should die." Gu Ruoyun nodded, showing agreement, "Your statement isn't wrong. If you're unable to defeat me, then you must die here as well!"

The crowd was stunned upon hearing this egotistical statement.

Gu Ruoyun was indeed a genius but that does not mean that she, who was still at a very young age, would have the ability to defeat a high-level Martial Honor!

"A speck of dust dares to squabble with the sun and the moon." The Immortal Master sneered, "What abilities do you have to be able to defeat me on your own? You're no match for me."



# Chapter 742: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (3)

---

The Immortal Master was right.

On this mainland, the higher the rank, the stronger their coercion.

If someone was a high-level Martial Honor, not even a hundred low-level Martial Honors could defeat that person.

Unless they had a spiritual weapon.

However, as the Master of the Immortal Realm, the Immortal Master has had many years of inside information from the Immortal Realm. Therefore, how could he not have at least one or two spiritual weapons in his possession?

Hence, Gu Ruoyun was simply no match for him.

"Stop!"

The Honorable Sir Tianqi could no longer ignore this and immediately rushed towards them. His elderly body turned into a hurricane as he aimed his attack towards the Immortal Master.

The Immortal Master glared coldly at him and produced a strong ray of light with a wave of his hand. It slammed fiercely into the Honorable Sir Tianqi's chest, causing him to stumble back.

"Even the members of the Spirit Sect wants to poke their noses in the businesses of others?"

The Immortal Master sneered stared at the Honorable Sir Tianqi's pale, elderly features, "Don't forget, the Three Great Authorities are considered as one body. Regardless of our internal squabbles, when faced with other enemies, we must all be on the same page! Yet, you had wanted to help an outsider to defeat the Immortal Master?"

The Honorable Sir Tianqi spoke with disdain, "As the Immortal Master and a high-level Martial Honor, isn't it a little inexcusable for you to cause trouble for a person from the younger generation? Furthermore, it was the Immortal Realm who had acted unreasonably first!"

"Haha!"

The Immortal Master laughed as if he had just heard a funny joke. His laughter was filled with arrogance and madness. His lips had curled into a sarcastic angle.

"Acted unreasonably first? Hehe, the Immortal Realm has never committed such rude acts. Also, if I wish to kill anyone, they definitely deserve to die! Gu Ruoyun has killed countless people, many have died unjustly in her hands. I, as the Master of the Immortal Realm, must act in place of the Heaves and get rid of this disaster. What sin is there in this? I'm only killing the Dongfang family as a way to deal with this woman! So, I simply don't believe that I'm wrong in any way."

The Immortal Master sneered as he swept his gaze towards Gu Ruoyun's expressionless face. He stared commandingly down at her, looking at her as if she was some sort of insignificant ant and he was a god who controlled that ant's life!

That's right!

In the Immortal Master's heart, he was the god of the West Spirit Mainland! Everyone else must only listen to his commands alone and if anyone tries to oppose him, they would become the enemy of the mainland as well.

"You..."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi trembled with rage. He was about to say something again when the woman's clear and calm voice slowly drifted into his ears.

"Honorable Sir Tianqi, this matter has nothing to do with you.

The Spirit Sect does not need to step in."

The woman gently raised her delicate features amidst the night winds and her dark hair danced in the breeze, "Immortal Realm, I can tolerate whatever you've done in the past to the end of days. However, the only thing that I can't tolerate is the harm your organization had caused towards the people I've sworn to protect! Hence..."

She paused and her features did not display any trace of emotion from the very beginning, "The Immortal Realm shall be exterminated from the face of this earth!"

"Haha, then I'd really like to see if you can do that."

The Immortal Master burst into laughter. It was a laughter filled with an icy chill, causing everyone there to back away with unconscious understanding. They left a large space in the middle, terrified that they would end up wounded from the effects of the oncoming battle.

Boom!

An endless amount of aura erupted from the Immortal Master's very being. From a distance, he looked absolutely merciless as he stood tall amidst the white fog!

Then...

A white sword appeared in his hand. It emitted such an icy chill that it could freeze a person into ice. He brandished it towards Gu Ruoyun in one swift move.

His tall figure began to circle around Gu Ruoyun's slender body. The sword in the man's hand followed his sneer and slowly aimed downwards.

# Chapter 743: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (4)

---

A wild wind rose, surrounding the two.

Soon, the crowd watched as the Immortal Master's sword fell, piercing through Gu Ruoyun's chest.

Zing!

The sword had pierced through the woman's chest but the strange thing was, when the blade had gone through, there was no blood.

Instantly, the Immortal Master narrowed his eyes and furrowed his brows at the slowly dissolving figure.

"An afterimage?"

The crowd was in shock. They never thought that this woman, whose chest had just been pierced by the Immortal Master's sword, could create an afterimage.

"Hmph."

Feeling a gust of wind behind him, the Immortal Master scoffed coldly before hurriedly turning around to raise his sword and block the attack. The woman behind him was instantly sent stumbling back and a trail of fresh blood trickled down from the corner of her lips.

"Hmph!"

The Immortal Master scoffed again as a disdainful smile appeared on the corners of his lips. He stared condescendingly down at the woman before him.

"You've overestimated yourself!"

Boom!

A powerful wave energy emerged from his body and turned into a

large fist before him. It was aimed towards Gu Ruoyun and seemed to contain the power to topple mountains and overturn seas. Everything on earth seemed to pale in view of such power.

Bang!

Gu Ruoyun hurriedly raised her hand to catch the fist but the high-pressured oppression quickly drained her face of color. Her clear, cold gaze pierced through the thick layers of obstruction and fell upon the man's arrogant face.

Boom!

Boom, boom, boom!

Wave after wave of energy came cutting down from the void. They were aimed mercilessly towards her delicate and slender figure but Gu Ruoyun did not retreat. Her green robes have now become torn and haggard as it fluttered gently against the night winds.

"Mm?"

The Immortal Master felt a hint of shock as if he never expected the woman before him to successfully oppose his powerful attacks.

"Are you done?"

Gu Ruoyun wiped the blood from the corner of her lips and stared emotionlessly at the Immortal Master's shocked face. She spoke in a clear and cold voice, "Since you're done, it's now my turn."

Whoosh!

After she spoke, the woman raised her own sword in a horizontal direction. The sword emitted a white light that could take away one's soul as if it were a glaringly bright light that shone in the hearts of men.

"Roar!"

A loud roar sounded from the longsword in the woman's hand. At

that moment, the entire mountain range shivered.

A large, pale white dragon flew out from the sword. It spat an entire mouthful of dragon's breath towards the Immortal Master who was only a few feet away.

"A high-level spiritual weapon?"

The Immortal Master's face finally displayed a hint of change. The expression in his eyes sank as he watched the pale dragon's breath hurling towards him. He quickly stepped back and blocked the attack.

"A high-level spiritual weapon, this woman actually has a high-level spiritual weapon in her hands!"

"Only a high-level spiritual weapon can contain a weapon spirit. I never thought that she would actually have such a powerful thing in her hands."

"Also, if I'm not sensing this wrongly, Gu Ruoyun's powers seem to be at the rank of a low-level Martial Honor!"

A twenty-year-old low-level Martial Honor, how many people on this mainland would actually have the ability to achieve this?

The crowd's hearts were shaken but collectively, they all felt pity instead.

If she could have waited another few years, perhaps no one on this mainland would be a match for her. Unfortunately, she was far too brash. Regardless of the situation, the Immortal Master, a high-level Martial Honor, was not someone that she could easily defeat.

# Chapter 744: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (5)

---

Her chances of success were slim even if she has a high-level spiritual weapon in her hands.

Aside from Gu Ruoyun's fight, the other battles were also still ongoing.

The members of the Devil Sect and the many spiritual beasts had bloodlust in their eyes. As long as a member of the Immortal Realm was nearby, they would all die by their devilish claws! As such, under a sky smudged by the sunset's afterglow, one could smell the thick stench of blood in the air.

The crimson color set off against the night sky brilliantly, it was absolutely shocking!

Boom!

Boom, boom, boom!

The pale dragon burst from the longsword over and over again as it charged mercilessly towards the Immortal Master.

The Immortal Master used his sleeve to block the former's attacks and his handsome features grew increasingly icy.

Too fast!

This pale dragon's movements were extremely fast! If he wants to attack Gu Ruoyun by going around it, the pale dragon would still block him over and over again! Even if he lost track of the number of times he has killed the pale dragon, it would always be reborn from the longsword!

As a weapon spirit, the pale dragon could not be killed unless one destroys the weapon itself!

"Gu Ruoyun!"

The Immortal Master's heart sank heavily to the depths of his being. He looked at the emotionless woman and said, "Fight me on your own if you're all that skilled! You're using your spiritual weapon to block me, what kind of ability is that?"

Gu Ruoyun calmly stared back at the Immortal Master and did not respond.

Under the crowd's watchful eye, a powerful force suddenly erupted from her body. Instantly, an endless spiritual energy circled around the top of her head, forming a strong hurricane!

"A breakthrough? To a mid-level Martial Honor?"

Everyone was stunned and stared in shock at Gu Ruoyun. They never expected that she would have a breakthrough!

"I did not expect to rush here just in time to watch just a good show."

At a short distance away, amongst the crowd, a villainous-looking man was seated on a lounge chair as he observed the proceedings. His lips curled into an indolent smile as his finger gently stroked his chin.

He was flanked by a group of irresistibly beautiful handmaidens with an austere look on each of their faces. They stood next to him like tree stumps rooted to the ground.

"However, Xiao Yun'er is truly Gu Shengxiao's little sister. The power she holds in her hand is truly shocking." The man's alluring eyes curved into such a beautiful smile that it was indescribable, "Also, the bigger the spiritual ocean, the faster the breakthroughs in the future. She has proved this today."

The man continued to watch Gu Ruoyun as the smile in his eyes grew increasingly pronounced.

It's been over two years since we've last met and this woman has become so powerful...



However...

An unknown thought crossed his mind and an obscure light briefly flashed across his eyes. It was too fast for anyone to notice and the man soon reverted to his mischievous smile.

...

Boom!

Once Gu Ruoyun's breakthrough has concluded, she raised her longsword once again and the pale dragon charged out with a loud roar. Its enormous body then slammed fiercely into the Immortal Master.

Following Gu Ruoyun's breakthrough, the power of her spiritual weapon had grown as well.

The Immortal Master hurriedly picked up his sword to block the attack but his arm seemed to shake violently as if his skin was about to be torn off. He stumbled back and the cold smile on his face became increasingly grave.

"Gu Ruoyun!"

The Immortal Master's eyes looked cold and his face was like ice. He still looked at Gu Ruoyun as if she was an ant. His gaze was full of arrogance, "Now, you've indeed reached the level where you have the right to fight with me. As such, I'm not going to go easy on you."

He clutched the sword in his hand and reappeared behind Gu Ruoyun in a flash.

# Chapter 745: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (6)

---

The Immortal Master stood tall on thin air and raised his sword high before slashing it mercilessly down at Gu Ruoyun's skull. His eyes were filled with murderous intent.

Bang!

Gu Ruoyun seemed to have eyes at the back of her head as she blocked the attack with a wave of her longsword. A fiery light erupted along with a great wave of spiritual energy, destroying everything around the two opponents.

"Hmph!"

The Immortal Master scoffed coldly. His arm flexed as he pushed violently at Gu Ruoyun's sword.

Gu Ruoyun's feet dug furrows in the ground under the sheer force of his power but she never loosened her grip and continued to clutch her sword tightly in her hand. She then gathered all her power and directed it towards her sword.

A violent wind blew and her green robes danced in the air.

The wind immediately destroyed the remainder of her robes but she did not seem to notice and persisted in sending all her power into the longsword. Suddenly, the sword was engulfed in a red hurricane with a scorching heat that promises armageddon.

"I could care less about what the Immortal Realm has done but this time, you've done something that you should never have even considered!"

"What?"

The Immortal Master was shaken but before he could regain his senses, the red hurricane in Gu Ruoyun's sword hurled towards him, instantly surrounding his body.

However, despite the time-consuming technique, a ray of light soon shot out from the red hurricane and divided it into half, causing it to disperse into the void.

However, the crowd was stunned when they saw the person who had emerged from the hurricane.

The previously elegant and saintly-looking man now looked torn and tattered. His hair was a complete mess as if he had just crawled out from a rubbish heap. His entire being no longer carried the originally dignified stature of the Immortal Master.

He was now thoroughly enraged and his cold, hard features had become utterly furious. If anyone ignorant of the situation were to see his face now, they would immediately assume that Gu Ruoyun had just killed his entire family.

"Gu Ruoyun!!!"

He gritted his teeth as he spat.

Ever since I've become the Immortal Master, I've always been treated with reverence and respect.

However, not only is this woman before me threatening to destroy the Immortal Realm, she has humiliated me in front of so many people! She has crossed the line!

"Hehe." Suddenly, he smiled. This smile did not contain any of his previous arrogance, it was instead filled with anger and hatred, "If you're truly skilled, you should have no problems in laying down your spiritual weapon and fighting properly with me! If it wasn't for that spiritual weapon in your hand, you'd have no chance of defeating me!"

Gu Ruoyun shot him a cold glare and spat icily, "Idiot."

Idiot?

This woman has the audacity to humiliate me by calling me an idiot!

The Immortal Master was completely insulted. He no longer cared about his elegant public image as he charged towards Gu Ruoyun like a mad man.

"I'm going to kill you! I'll make you understand that anyone who opposes the Immortal Realm will be rewarded with a bad end!"

An infinite amount of power erupted, carrying an aura so powerful that it could bring about the armageddon!

The Immortal Master gathered all his power to the front of his body and threw it all down mercilessly towards Gu Ruoyun.

Boom!

The white dragon charged out of the sword once again. It rose up in one leap and directed its dragon's breath towards the Immortal Master.

Previously, the white dragon may not have been able to defeat the Immortal Master. However, with Gu Ruoyun's upgrade in power, the powers of the spiritual weapon were also increased by another level as well.

As such, after coming into contact with this scorching heat, the Immortal Master's body suddenly became sluggish and fell from the sky, crashing heavily into the ground!

# Chapter 746: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (7)

---

A large quantity of blood gushed from his mouth, painting the ground red. The Immortal Master's eyes had turned red. He glared fixedly at the calm and serene girl before gritting out, "Gu Ruoyun, you'll regret this!"

Yes, for everything that she has done to me today, this woman will regret it!

Her outcome? A horrible death!

"Regret?" Gu Ruoyun smiled icily, "I'll definitely regret it if I don't kill you today."

"The Immortal Realm holds a bright and sacred existence! We represent the entire West Spirit Mainland. If you make me your enemy, you will be cast into hell, never to be reincarnated!" The Immortal Master once again displayed that cold, arrogant look on his face as he stared at Gu Ruoyun and spat, "Besides, if you exterminate the Immortal Realm today, no one else would be able to stop the demons when they attack the mainland! You, Gu Ruoyun, would become the greatest criminal on the mainland!"

"My apologies, just me alone is enough to deal with the demons. There's no need for the Immortal Realm to help." Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders, her voice sounded like a refreshing breeze on a clear day.

"Hahaha!"

The Immortal Master burst into laughter as if he had just heard a ludicrous joke, "Gu Ruoyun, your mind is far too simple. Do you really think that the demons can be so easily defeated? The leader of the demons' power may be on the same level as mine, that means he's a high-level Martial Honor as well. Still, do you know how we've been battling those demons all these years? Even after

the high-leveled Martial Honors of the Three Great Authorities had joined forces, we could not defeat him! We were only able to resist him for half a month! When I see how much you're relying on this spiritual weapon to defeat me, you're definitely no match for the leader of the demons!"

Gu Ruoyun raised her eyebrows and stared at the Immortal Master with her clear and cold eyes.

"Lady Gu, there are some things that I'm not sure if I should mention."

Just then, a voice spoke up from the crowd.

The Lord of the Amethyst Underworld Palace stepped out from the crowd. He glanced at the Immortal Master who was lying on the ground and furrowed his brow. A cold light flashed in his eyes before his gaze then fell upon Gu Ruoyun.

"Lady Gu, please listen to me," The Palace Lord smiled bitterly, "The Courts of Hell has never got along with the Immortal Realm. However, there's a reason why we've avoided getting into large confrontations after so many years. This was all for the sake of the Demon War. The Three Great Authorities can't exist without one another so regardless of how much I've disliked the Immortal Realm, I've never acted upon it. If you truly wish to destroy the Immortal Realm, Lady Gu, then you should wait until the end of the battle. Otherwise, when the demons enter the mainland, the consequences would be unimaginable!"

Based on the previous circumstances, they would be able to stop the demons even if they did not have the Immortal Realm's support but with the addition of Gu Ruoyun.

However, he had just received word that the demons' powers have grown by leaps and bounds this year! This was especially true about the leader of the demons. The Palace Lord was worried that even with their combined powers, they might not be able to stop him! This was why he has decided to placate Gu Ruoyun.

After all, under these circumstances, they would still need the Immortal Realm's power.

The Immortal Master sneered. He felt no gratitude towards the Palace Lord for standing up for him. To him, everything the Palace Lord had said was expected! It was the mainland's fault for being unable to sustain itself without the Immortal Realm's power.

Gu Ruoyun laughed icily as she turned her head towards the arrogant-looking Immortal Master and spoke frostily, "What does the safety of the mainland have anything to do with me? If I'm not even able to protect those who I wish to protect, what's the use of having this mainland around? I'm not going to spare anyone from the Immortal Realm today! Otherwise, after this, there would be even more people who will find any excuse to harm those who are closest to me!"

# Chapter 747: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (8)

---

"I don't care whether it's the Immortal Realm or the Ghost Realm! I don't care about the demons either! All I know is that those who harm the people closest to me will pay for everything they've done. I want to kill all of them as well. None shall be spared!"

The woman's voice as was clear and cold as ever but the ferocity of her words struck violently into the hearts of everyone present. Just as they were staring at her in fear, a flash of green robes slowly started making its way towards the Immortal Master.

"In the past, you had hunted and tried to kill me. Was it fun? Now, because of you, Yu'er has been severely injured. Today, no matter who steps in to beg for mercy for you, I won't spare a single person from the Immortal Realm!"

Gu Ruoyun slowly closed her eyes.

She would never forget the sight of that slim and delicate figure lying in a pool of blood.

The thought of that crippled arm especially caused her heart to ache.

Boom!

Just as she opened her eyes, an infinite flame accompanied the woman's fiery anger. It whirled out from within and was directed solely at the Immortal Master!

It was the Flames of World Devastation!

Also known as the Flames of Nirvana!

The Flames of Nirvana could bring a dead man back to life. At the same time, they could also bring such pain upon one's enemies that though they wished to die, they cannot die! Only when their soul



was burned away could they finally disappear from the face of the earth.

They would then never be able to reincarnate!

Hence, accompanied by the Immortal Master's heart-rending shrieks, everyone there witnessed a scene which they would never forget.

They watched as the flames engulfed the Immortal Master. His flesh fell from his body bit by bit and was burned into ashes until his bones could be clearly seen. Not long after, his bones were consumed by the flames as well.

However, in the next moment, the Immortal Master who had been turned into ashes was brought back to life!

That's right!

He had been revived but he no longer had any powers. He had been revived as a completely normal person! Still, he was unable to escape the flames and he screamed continuously amidst the burning fire...

It was a repeated cycle of endless torment until the complete annihilation of his soul. Only then would he be able to escape this agony.

Of course, why should Gu Ruoyun grant him a quick death? As such, his soul could only be destroyed after going through tens of thousands of repetitive torture...

Forget about everyone else, even the Honorable Sir Tianqi was shocked. His elderly eyes were opened as wide as they could as he stared in astonishment at Gu Ruoyun's clear and cold features. He could not help but feel a shiver down his spine.

This is too cruel!

This little girl is absolutely merciless! She has resorted to such a brutal method to ensure that the Immortal Master would suffer a

fate worse than death! However, that old man had brought it upon himself. If he had not instigated the Gu girl, she would probably not have become so enraged.

"Tianqiong, Yunyao, Lingxiao."

Gu Ruoyun raised her head and turned towards the humans and beasts who were nearly finished with the Immortal Realm. She coldly raised her lips, "After you're done killing them, hang their bodies on the walls of the city and whip them for all to see as a warning to everyone else!"

Whip their bodies for all to see!

Generally speaking, not many would whip the dead bodies of their enemies in public after killing them but Gu Ruoyun had chosen to do this so that everyone would remember this day. This was to ensure that they would never dare to lay a hand on those closest to her.

Otherwise, they would end up just like the Immortal Realm!

Everyone backed away in terror, they looked as if they had just encountered an evil demon.

Gu Ruoyun ignored their fearful stares and turned her gaze instead towards the completely ashen Rong Xin. She raised her clear and cold eyes, "What? There's only a few of you left in the Medicine Order here? How about we wait until this battle ends, then you'll escort me to the Medicine Order for a visit. What do you think?"

# Chapter 748: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (9)

---

Rong Xin stumbled back and shook her head vigorously, "You're a demon, an evil demon!"

That's right!

This woman is an evil demon! Her heart could actually harbor such cruelty!

Rong Xin had originally thought that her own heart was malicious enough but when compared with this woman, it was like a small witch meeting a bigger witch.

Gu Ruoyun slowly lowered her eyelids and a cold smile hung on the corners of her lips, "I originally had plans to leave the Medicine Order alone all this while. Only Wei Yiyi is allowed to destroy you. Unfortunately, you've done something you should never have done! Wei Yiyi, Yan, I want you two to lock her up. Once the Demon War has ended, we'll make a trip to the Immortal Realm's headquarters!"

After all, the participants in the battle were the best of the best in their organization but there were still many others who were not present.

Gu Ruoyun had gone to the Medicine Order before this and was unable to find Rong Xin and the others. Now that they had been allied with the Immortal Realm, it was easy to imagine where the rest of the Medicine Order was at this moment!

"No!"

Rong Xin screamed as she stumbled back slowly, her trembling body displayed how truly afraid she felt for all to see.

Wei Yiyi walked towards Rong Xin and curled her lips into a smile. Her gorgeous face displayed an obvious charm.

"Rong Xin, did you ever think you would live to see a day like this? However, I've waited for this day for far too long. I've been waiting ever since you had murdered our Master and put the blame on me!"

"Senior Sister, Senior Sister Yiyi, I've done wrong. I beg you, spare me on account of our past friendship."

Rong Xin, completely stupefied with fear, fell kneeling to the ground as she sobbed profusely and begged incessantly.

Unfortunately, Wei Yiyi had hardened her heart long ago. Furthermore, Rong Xin had murdered their Master. Because of this, she would never forgive her.

"The Heavens watch over the actions of humans. You will face retribution for committing so many sins. Rong Xin, when you had killed the Master, did you not think that this day would ever come?" The smile on Wei Yiyi's face slowly disappeared. At this moment, the old Order Master's kindly face appeared once again in her mind's eye.

Master, after so many years, I can finally avenge you. You can rest in peace in Heaven now.

As for Little Junior Sister... Don't worry, Master. I'll save her and I'll never let anyone harm her again.

Gu Ruoyun said nothing else. She took one last look at the Immortal Master who was still struggling within the flames before leaving without even a backward glance.

...

The woman had just stepped into the tent when she heard a gentle and loving voice.

"Yun'er, you're back?"

Gu Shengxiao smiled gently and gazed indulgently at Gu Ruoyun.

Honestly, while he had given Gu Ruoyun permission to clear her

grudge against the Immortal Realm, he had not stopped worrying about her. However, she had asked him to take care of Xia Linyu so he had not stepped forward. Still, after she had left, he had dispatched his men to inform the Spirit Sect's Master and the Lord of the Amethyst Underworld Palace.

With two high-level Martial Honors around, he could let go of his worries that Gu Ruoyun could get hurt by the Immortal Master.

Of course, because Gu Shengxiao had not followed her, he was completely unaware of the events which had transpired on the battlefield.

"Big Sister..."

Just then, a frail voice sounded from the bed.

Gu Ruoyun hurriedly walked towards the bed upon hearing the youth's weak voice. Her clear and cold eyes were filled with anxiety.

"Yu'er, are you alright?"

Xia Linyu smiled. His delicate features looked extremely pale, "My body is fine but my arm..."

# Chapter 749: Exterminating The Immortal Realm (10)

---

The youth's distressed and bitter smile caused Gu Ruoyun's heart to ache. She raised her arm and pulled the slim and delicate youth into a tight embrace. She placed her head on his shoulders and did not say a word.

When he felt a cold sensation on his shoulder, Xia Linyu's heart shook. He gently murmured, "Sister... Are you crying?"

"I'm sorry," Gu Ruoyun held onto the youth tightly, "I wasn't able to protect you."

"Sister," Xia Linyu smiled and looked joyful, setting off the emotions he felt in his heart, "It's only an arm. I may have lost an arm but I can still fight for you. Besides, now... I'm finally no longer a burden to you. I'm truly happy. Happier than I've ever felt when I discovered that I've come back to life."

Gu Shengxiao stood behind the two and frowned as he overheard their conversation.

However, he assumed that the youth was referring to his narrow escape from death as 'coming back to life', so he did not think too much of it.

"Yu'er, don't worry, I'll find a way to help heal your arm." Gu Ruoyun let go of the youth in her arms and her delicate features were full of resolve, "This is my promise to you."

"Sister..." Xia Linyu's heart trembled. He smiled as he said, "You don't need to give yourself too much pressure. To me, as long as you're by my side, it's more than enough. If that's the case, forget about losing an arm, I'd gladly give my leg away too."

In his past life, she was his Big Sister and they had both depended on each other to survive! She was also the person whom he wanted to protect for the rest of his life.

At the time, he had become a burden to his sister because his body was weak and unable to cultivate.

With great difficulty, he had been granted the opportunity to reincarnate so how could he give up so easily? Even if he were left with only an arm and a leg, he would continue to work hard!

"Big Brother," Gu Ruoyun fell silent before she turned towards Gu Shengxiao and said, "I'll have to trouble you to help take care of Yu'er for the next few days."

Gu Shengxiao nodded and caressed Gu Ruoyun's hair lovingly, "Don't worry, I'll take good care of him."

Gu Ruoyun then hurriedly walked out without another word and went straight back to her own tent.

Upon entering the tent, she reached into the Ancient Divine Pagoda and took out the phoenix egg.

"Zixie..." Gu Ruoyun stroked the phoenix egg in her hand and muttered, "When are you coming out? If you were here, perhaps you'd know of a way for us to help Yu'er."

"He's already gone through so much. How can I bear to let him live on without an arm for the rest of his life? I must help him no matter what, even if I have to give my own arm in exchange."

Crack.

Suddenly, a small crack appeared on the shell of the phoenix egg and Gu Ruoyun's finger suddenly froze in place. A wave of surprise appeared in her eyes.

"Zixie?"

Crack, crack!

The cracks started to grow as she watched excitedly, finally covering the entire phoenix egg.

After that...

The eggshell shattered with a crisp sound and the pieces slowly fell to the ground.

Gu Ruoyun felt as if her heart had stopped as she stared dazedly at the tiny purple phoenix lying in the palm of her hand. A great feeling of elation then bloomed in her heart, it was the kind of joy she has not felt since Zixie had left.

Even Gu Ruoyun herself could not describe the kind of emotion she was now feeling...



# Chapter 750: Zixie Returns (1)

---

The thing was, wasn't this phoenix a little too small?

The tiny phoenix rubbed his eyes sleepily and opened them, displaying a pair of beautiful eyes which shone like amethysts as he looked bewilderedly at Gu Ruoyun.

He then leaped off the woman's hand and fell to the ground. His body was then engulfed in a purple light as it grew longer and longer.

Not too long after that, the purple light disappeared and a little boy of around five to six years of age stood before Gu Ruoyun's eyes.

The little boy was dressed in purple robes and has a purple flame between his brows which set off his already mesmerizing features, making him look absolutely stunning. His skin was fair, tender and looked as soft as a baby's. His initially innocent-looking eyes looked demonic thanks to the purple color of his irises. His eyes were so beautiful that they tugged at one's heartstrings.

"Zixie?"

Gu Ruoyun stared at the little boy in purple robes in astonishment. Her eyes filled with hesitation, "Are you Zixie?"

"That's right, I'm currently a child."

The little boy nodded as he narrowed his beautiful amethyst eyes smilingly at Gu Ruoyun.

"Based on my observation, there's no mistake. You're indeed Zixie. However, do you still remember who I am?" Gu Ruoyun wrinkled her brows as her eyes fell upon the little boy.

I'm not sure if spiritual beasts do retain their past memories after death.

A demonic smile flashed across Zixie's eyes. Before Gu Ruoyun

could react, he suddenly appeared right in front of her and without any warning, a pair of warm, thin lips touched the woman's face...

"What a sweet fragrance."

Zixie smiled, looking like a sinister demon before he then blinked and stared at Gu Ruoyun.

Bang!

Gu Ruoyun's brain instantly froze. When she finally came to her senses, she immediately yanked Zixie by his robes and dangled him in the air before throwing him out the door. His little body coincidentally ended up crashing into Lingxiao who was on his way to give Gu Ruoyun a report.

"Uh..."

Zixie had smashed into Lingxiao and caused him to fall to the ground. He rubbed his numb head as his face filled with suspicion, "This... What's going on? Eh? Why is this scent so familiar? You... Are you Lord Zixie?"

Lingxiao's expression changed greatly as he sensed the aura from the person in front of him. He then quickly backed away while staring fearfully at the tiny figure before him.

"Lord Zixie, you've hatched?"

Zixie furrowed his brows and a glint flashed in his purple eyes but he did not say much. His gaze fell upon Gu Ruoyun once again.

"Lingxiao, you've come just in time." Gu Ruoyun rubbed her forehead as she tried to stave off a headache, "What on earth is going on with Zixie? He has been reborn but I feel as if his personality has changed. Why is that?"

"This..." Lingxiao carefully glanced over at Zixie, "Master, Lord Zixie has only just hatched so he's still a child. His personality would be similar to a human child's so it's quite different from his personality as an adult. Even though powerful spiritual beasts are

able to retain memories of their past life, since he has kind of shrunk, his reactions would definitely be very different from his adult form."

Gu Ruoyun's face turned dark . In other words, Zixie is now pretty much like a human child?

"When would he reach adulthood?"

Gu Ruoyun stroked her chin. She never expected that a newly-hatched Zixie would have powers at the rank of... A Martial Supreme?

No wonder the Ancient Divine Phoenix Zixie was addressed as the king of spiritual beasts, he truly was a king amongst spiritual beasts! Even in his childhood, he already possesses such great power. How powerful will he become once he reaches adulthood?

## Chapter 751: Zixie Returns (2)

---

Furthermore...

Before Zixie's death, he had already reached adulthood! Despite the fact that his powers had decreased substantially due to some unknown reasons, that had not changed the fact that he was an adult!

How powerful was his foe to have caused Zixie such severe injuries and the regression of his powers?

"I'm now a kid so you shouldn't bully me."

The little boy smiled innocently but his purple eyes displayed an unmasked demonic air.

"I feel a little awkward with this smaller version of Zixie." Gu Ruoyun shrugged. Suddenly, she smiled, "Why don't I call you Xiao Zixie from now on? Now, can you tell me how we can recover Yu'er's arm?"

Zixie has come back to life, he must have a way.

"Wait until you've reached the rank of a Martial Supreme. Once you've broken through to become a Martial Supreme, you'll be able to bring a dead man back to life and to regrow flesh and bones."

A Martial Supreme?

Gu Ruoyun fell silent, "My powers have reached their limit on the West Spirit Mainland. It seems that I can only progress more when I go to the East Peak Mainland. Therefore, once this matter has been settled, I will rush to the East Peak Mainland."

...

Ever since the Immortal Realm had been destroyed, every organization on the battlefield has grown quiet. They understood and feared that after today, the structure of the mainland would no longer be dominated by the Three Great Authorities. Instead, it

would be monopolized by the rising power known as the Devil Sect.

As such, everyone seemed to wish that they could communicate via telepathy and quickly send the news back to their families. Even more so, they urged themselves over and over again never to provoke anyone from the Dongfang family.

Otherwise, they would end up just like the Immortal Realm!

Even a powerful organization like the Immortal Realm could be destroyed at her command, what more everyone else?

Just as this sensation had broken out, the War of Gods and Demons finally began!

At this moment, on the battlefield, the organizations led by the Spirit Sect and the Amethyst Underworld Palace had gathered to one side. Facing them were a group of extremely tall figures which were charging towards their position. This group of figures looked like humans except that they were abnormally tall. The shortest amongst them was about two meters in height! They carried an exceptionally savage air. Not even killing tens of thousands of people could make up for a tiny fraction of their ruthlessness.

"Little girl, these are demons." The Honorable Sir Tianqi took a deep breath and spoke with a serious look in his eyes, "The demons' military strategy was to send out their weakest before gradually sending out their stronger soldiers. Finally, the leader of the demons will appear. He can also be considered as the number one cultivator on the mainland!"

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded and observed the demons charging towards them. Her voice remained clear and calm, "These demons are only at the rank of Martial Kings, I can send the Martial Kings of the Dongfang family to meet with them in battle!"

Martial King was the lowest rank amongst the demon race.

As they watched the demons charging toward them, the humans

finally made their move as well. Every Martial King was sent out into the battlefield to meet with the opposition at the center of the battlefield in hand-to-hand combat!

War is cruel. Countless people fell, their lives ended as they lay in a pool of blood.

However, each time the Dongfang family members and members of the Spirit Sect became wounded, they would swallow a pill and their wounds would be healed instantly. This way, many of them were able to survive the first assault. After all, Gu Ruoyun's agreement in letting them participate also included ensuring their safety.

She would not allow the Dongfang family disciples to put their lives at risk.

Everyone else watched as the Dongfang family disciples swallowed the pills and their eyes burned. Their hearts were filled with unbearable jealousy! Throughout their entire lives, they never even had the opportunity to smell the fragrance of pills yet these Dongfang family disciples were consuming them like candy. They could not help but feel their hearts shake tremendously.

## Chapter 752: Zixie Returns (3)

---

Very soon, the number of demons had diminished greatly. Once they realized that they could not win this battle, the group of demons retreated from the battlefield.

"The demons may harbor a desire to take over the mainland but they do not fight blindly." The Honorable Sir Tianqi looked at Gu Ruoyun and explained, "In order to protect their powers, they would not go all out every time. If there was no hope of victory, they will retreat to prepare for the next battle."

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded and raised her gaze towards the battlefield. Just then, a loud voice cried out and numerous figures charged towards them with a roar. The ferocity in their shouts caused everyone's heart to tremble.

"Kill!"

The Master of the Spirit Sect raised his hand and issued the order. Scores of Martial Emperors then charged towards them, once again meeting the demons in battle.

"You guys go as well."

Gu Ruoyun lifted her gaze as her clear, cold voice rang out under the sky, briefly muffling the sounds of bloodshed on the battlefield.

Upon receiving their master's order, the cultivators of the Devil Sect raised their weapons and charged into battle with a roar. Similarly, the spiritual beasts, which had been waiting for their orders, also galloped into battle. They had one goal, that was to destroy the demons!

Under the bright sunlight, the battlefield was soon littered with bodies. However, each time a demon was killed, their bodies would rot and immediately turn into a pile of bones. It was an utterly ghastly sight.

After a long period of time, the number of demons began to dwindle once again and they were losing the battle. This time, the ones on Gu Ruoyun's side did not let them off and chased after them to exterminate every last one of them. It was only when the last demon has had his head chopped off that they finally pulled back.

"We've lost many of our own in this battle once again."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi sighed as he laughed bitterly and helplessly. Even though Gu Ruoyun has previously given the Spirit Sect a large number of pills, not even the pills were enough to resist the demons' power. While they had won in the end, many had lost their lives as well.

"Kill!"

"Kill them all!"

A few seconds later, a loud yell sounded from the demon's faction, followed by a powerful force. This time, the number of demons was not as great as before but they were still not to be underestimated.

"Martial Honors!"

The Honorable Sir Tianqi's expression changed again, "I never thought that after ten years, the demons would end up producing so many Martial Honors. Their numbers are even more than the ones we have combined! It seems that this time, the Sect Master and the Lord of the Amethyst Underworld Palace have to personally make an appearance. Otherwise, we won't be able to defeat this many Martial Honors!"

Just as he spoke, the Honorable Sir Tianqi noticed over ten figures charging into the battlefield. These figures included the high-level Martial Honors from the two Great Authorities.

He then no longer said another word to Gu Ruoyun and headed towards the battle.



Gu Ruoyun gently stroked her chin and observed the battle. A sense of consideration flashed in her eyes but she did not make a move to follow the Honorable Poison Master and the rest to enter this round of battle.

Everyone's eyes were bloodshot from killing everything in sight, they have lost track of how many demon's blood now stained their swords. All they knew was that they had to kill the enemy before them even if they had to give up everything they had.

Time passed slowly and the initially scorching afternoon sun was now setting. Darkness soon filled the sky.

The Honorable Sir Tianqi began to feel fatigued and was somewhat unable to face off against the powerful enemy before him. He wiped the cold sweat off his forehead before discarding everything else and charging back into battle.

## Chapter 753: Zixie Returns (4)

---

Just then, a sword suddenly appeared behind him.

The demon's merciless eyes were filled with malice as he swung his sword at him.

Clash!

Just as the demon swung his sword, a figure in grey flashed past behind the Honorable Sir Tianqi and blocked the sword!

The Honorable Sir Tianqi stared blankly into space. He never thought that the person who had just saved his life would turn out to be the one who wanted him dead most of all, the Honorable Poison Master!

"Hmph!"

The Honorable Poison Master pushed forcefully, causing the enemy to stumble back. He then spoke in an eerie voice without turning his head, "I'm saving your life just this once for that little girl's sake. You'll still have to pay for peeping on something you shouldn't have sooner or later."

The Honorable Sir Tianqi's mouth twitched. Could it be that I no longer have to worry about this old fart's relentless threats and pursuit as long as the Gu girl is around?

Nevertheless, the Honorable Sir Tianqi does not have the time to squabble with the Honorable Poison Master during the battle. He quickly concealed his emotions and once again devoted himself to the fight

"Chehehe!"

Suddenly, a wave of monstrous laughter sounded from the void and filled the entire battlefield.

Everyone who heard this laughter could not help but feel their hearts tremble. Even breathing felt like a difficult thing to do.

"How many years has it been? How many years has it been since the Celestial Spirit Clan had been locked away in this place? It has been so many years since we've tried to enter this mainland but of all things, it has been you, idiotic humans, who keep standing in our way!"

An elderly figure suddenly appeared from the void. He was extremely tall and his face was riddled with wrinkles like an old tree bark. Those who saw that face immediately felt extremely uncomfortable.

'Demon' was the nickname given by humans to these cruel abnormalities. The true name of their race was the Celestial Spirit Clan!

The Celestial Spirit Clan were originally one of the inhabitants of the mainland. They were exceptionally cruel and had provoked a powerful cultivator before being imprisoned in this land by that powerful cultivator! The soil in this land was so poor that many members of the Celestial Spirit Clan were unable to stave off their hunger. Therefore, they constantly wished to return to the mainland once again.

No!

This time, they want to proclaim themselves as the sovereign ruler over the mainland and make the humans serve them!

"That's the leader of the demons."

Gu Shengxiao took a few steps back to stand next to Gu Ruoyun. He furrowed his brows and turned towards the elderly man standing in the void, "He's very powerful, his powers are a few times more powerful than most high-level Martial Honors! Unless you're a Martial Supreme, no one would be able to match him. Not even if a hundred Martial Honors were to join forces."

"Really?" Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow, "So, is he a high-level Martial Honor or a Martial Supreme?"

"He is a high-level Martial Honor."

Gu Shengxiao replied with certainty, "This leader of the demons' cultivation techniques are unorthodox and that's why he is unmatched amongst those in the rank of a high-level Martial Honor. However, I can confirm that he hasn't broken through to the rank of a Martial Supreme yet."

"Then I can relax."

Gu Ruoyun heaved a sigh of relief before walking towards the elderly man standing in the void.

"Yun'er, what are you planning?" Gu Shengxiao's heart suddenly clenched and he quickly chased after her. He held tightly onto Gu Ruoyun's shoulder as he implored with furrowed brows, "Yun'er, don't be brash. I know you've defeated the Immortal Master but the leader of the demons is not like him at all. It's safer if you stick with me."

Gu Ruoyun put her hand on the back of Gu Shengxiao's hand and slowly pushed it away from her shoulder.

"As long as he hasn't broken through to the rank of a Martial Supreme, dealing with him shouldn't be much of a problem."

## Chapter 754: Zixie Returns (5)

---

One should not underestimate the difference between a Martial Supreme and a high-level Martial Honor! As long as he has not grown out of this rank, there was no need for her to worry despite how invincible he was amongst other high-level Martial Honors!

"Yun'er..."

Gu Shengxiao was stunned and he could only watch as the woman left. He did not know why but at this very moment, he suddenly believed that she could do it.

He trusts her abilities and judgment, perhaps they really have a shot at defeating this old man this time.

"Everyone, fall back."

The woman's clear and cold voice rang out on the battlefield, "Leave these people to me."

What?

Everyone was in shock and were momentarily unable to come to terms with the situation.

Does she mean that she is going to challenge every Martial Honor enemy on her own? Especially with the one who was considered invincible amongst Martial Honors?!

"Let's fall back."

The Spirit Sect's Master glanced over at Gu Ruoyun and ordered everyone in the Spirit Sect to back away.

Everyone else fell silent for a moment but ultimately, they chose to listen to Gu Ruoyun's words. Soon, only Gu Ruoyun and the demons were left on the noisy battlefield.

"Chehehe." The old man cackled once again and stared creepily at Gu Ruoyun, "Little girl, do you want to challenge all of us? When had the human race produced such a brainless person? It seems

that it would be best if the mainland is taken over by the Celestial Spirit Clan."

As he spoke, the woman underneath him retained her calm expression. Her clear, cold features did not change. Then, the crowd watched as a purple cauldron suddenly appeared in the sky above her.

"What's that?"

Everyone stared in confusion at Gu Ruoyun, unable to comprehend what she was doing.

A cauldron?

Does she think that this cauldron could solve everything?

Just as everyone was beginning to doubt Gu Ruoyun's behavior, the floating cauldron suddenly grew bigger and bigger extremely quickly...

Everyone widened their eyes in shock. Even the demons were in a daze.

Then...

Boom!

The cauldron suddenly rose to the highest point in the sky before smashing fiercely into the ground! The smash carved a deep chasm in the ground and the battlefield shook as if an earthquake had just occurred. Some of them even lost their balance and fell sitting on the ground.

Soon, everything was peaceful once again. Gu Ruoyun put the Ancient Divine Pagoda back into storage and slowly rose to her feet. She then spoke with a calm look in her eyes, "It's finished, let's go."

Fi-finished?

As they heard her words, everyone's hearts trembled fiercely. It was a long time before they could return to their senses.

Had the cauldron crushed all the enemies to death?

The crowd gulped intensely, completely unable to believe what they had just seen.

Those headache-inducing demons, archenemies of all mankind, had been wiped out just like that?

"If she had used that cauldron during her battle with the Immortal Realm, would there be any opportunity for the Immortal Master to even speak?"

No one knew who had said this but the silent crowd immediately exploded into a cacophony of discussion, chattering over what they had just witnessed.

However, they knew that Gu Ruoyun probably would not have used the cauldron to smash the Immortal Master to the ground. Based on what the Immortal Master had done to her, she would not have possibly granted him such an easy death.

Smashing them to the ground with the cauldron would have been too easy.

"No wonder. No wonder she paid no heed to the Immortal Realm and had discarded all else to destroy the Immortal Realm. That's because she had such a powerful trump card! She has destroyed the demons in one day!"

# Chapter 755: The End (1)

---

"If it wasn't for the fact that the demons had attacked in waves, the battle might have ended even sooner! Perhaps she was waiting for their leader to show up."

"Kill! Let's kill the remaining demons and forever end any future disasters!"

After everyone had regained their senses, they waved their weapons and charged towards the demons' lair. Since the demon's leader has been killed, in order to prevent another leader from rising up, they must exterminate all of them. None will be spared!

Gu Shengxiao slowly turned around and stared at the woman's figure from far away. His cool, dark eyes sank.

Yun'er, how many more secrets are you keeping from me?

Why do I keep having this feeling that you've become another person?

...

In the tent.

Xiao Zixie cocked his head and stared at Gu Ruoyun who was packing her things, "Yun'er, why didn't you let me fight?"

Gu Ruoyun's fingers paused in the middle of packing and she turned around to look at the little boy's beautiful face. She raised an eyebrow and replied, "I wanted to test the might of the Ancient Divine Pagoda. You had once told me that when my powers are strong enough, I can control it completely and have it come out and fight for me! I wanted to see whether I could control it with my current level of power."

This was her true reason!

Now that she could control the powers of the Ancient Divine Pagoda, even if she meets with a Martial Supreme ranked enemy,



she could kill them no matter how many of them had attacked her.

Xiao Zixie was just about to speak when the doorway to the tent suddenly opened. A tall and grim man appeared.

"Big Brother?"

Gu Ruoyun was surprised and stared at the man in confusion.

"Yun'er," A complicated look flashed in Gu Shengxiao's eyes, "Are you leaving?"

"Mm."

Gu Ruoyun nodded, "Since the battle has ended, it's time for me to leave. This time, I'm heading to another mainland. Big Brother, please take care of yourself."

"Yun'er."

Gu Shengxiao stepped forward. His big and tall figure filled Gu Ruoyun's view. There was something he wished to say but in the end, he simply sighed.

"You... Stay sharp and take good care of yourself."

"Big Brother," Gu Ruoyun lifted her head and looked at the man's grim face, "There are some things that I can't tell you but I want you to know that I will no longer allow myself to be bullied by others. This is why I want to grow stronger, to become so strong that no one else can bully me ever again!"

Gu Shengxiao's body shook. He then lowered his head and looked at the woman before him with a complicated expression on his face.

"I know."

He had always known!

Over those many years, how much abuse had she suffered under the thumb of the Gu family? Each time his attention lapsed, they would take the opportunity to bully her.

Because of this, it was understandable why she wants to grow stronger.

"I'm sorry, Yun'er, Big Brother was not capable enough to protect you." Gu Shengxiao pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms and hugged her tightly. His large hand stroked her hair indulgently, "I know you're planning to go to the East Peak Mainland. With your current level of power, you're completely invincible on the West Spirit Mainland now. You go on ahead, I'll come for you later."

She has grown so strong because she no longer wanted to be abused by others.

However, no matter how powerful she becomes, she would always be his Little Sister!

His Little Sister who had once clung to him and needed his protection.

Gu Ruoyun smiled, "Once I deal with the Medicine Order, I'll head to the East Peak Mainland immediately after. Please help me, inform our maternal grandmother and grandfather! And... Please help me protect Yu'er."

## Chapter 756: The End (2)

---

She was still unsure of the dangers which lay ahead on the East Peak Mainland so she could not bring Xia Linyu along. Only when she was powerful enough would she return to take him with her.

"Alright."

Gu Shengxiao nodded. His eyes were filled with gentleness and love, "Leave everything to me. You can rest assured and go on ahead. I'll meet you again soon enough."

"Big Brother."

Gu Ruoyun released herself from Gu Shengxiao's embrace. She was about to saying something but in the end, she condensed it all to two words, "Take care."

"Take care!"

She took one last look at Gu Shengxiao, scooped Xiao Zixie up and headed out of the tent.

She did take another look back!

She was afraid that if she ever turned back, she could not have endured leaving him...

...

Previously, when the Medicine Order had chosen to join the Immortal Realm, they had set up their living quarters in a city near the Immortal Realm's headquarters! Obviously, one of the reasons behind this was to avoid being found by Gu Ruoyun!

At this moment, because the battle had just ended, the rest have yet to return. So, the Medicine Order was not aware of what had transpired on the battlefield.

Therefore, when Wei Yiyi and Rong Xin had appeared, the members of the Medicine Order were shocked and someone immediately informed the elders. Hence, not too long after,

countless figures flew towards them before landing in the middle of the courtyard.

"Wei Yiyi, what's the meaning of this?"

Lin Jun recognized Wei Yiyi, who was restraining Rong Xin, with one glance. His expression did not change and his handsome face darkened as he questioned her.

"What's the meaning of this?"

Wei Yiyi smiled mockingly, "Can't you see? I've restrained a criminal and brought her here to pay for her crimes against the old Order Master!"

"What on earth are you talking about?" Lin Jun's expression became darker and he retorted icily, "Let go of our Order Master. You've already murdered the old Order Master, kidnapped Junior Sister Nan Xiao, and treated our present Order master with utter disrespect. Wei Yiyi, has your conscience been consumed by dogs?"

"Hehe."

Wei Yiyi lifted her lips into a mocking smile, "Lin Jun, do you not feel guilty about the words you're spewing? I'll say this once more; the reason I've come here are to save Nan Xiao and to expose Rong Xin's true nature for everyone in the Medicine Order to see!"

Boom!

Upon arriving in the courtyard, every elder who had overheard Wei Yiyi's words immediately burst into sensation out of shock.

Elder Tianli hurriedly stepped forward. His elderly eyes measured Wei Yiyi and his voice carried a slew of emotions, "Wei Yiyi, is it really you? Also, what do you mean when you said those words?"

"Elder Tianli."

Wei Yiyi displayed some measure of respect in her voice as she addressed Elder Tianli, "I'm here today to provide an explanation

for everything which had happened all those years ago! I'm also here to avenge my Master!"

Wei Yiyi then threw Rong Xin to the ground and sneered, "This woman, in order to obtain the Treasured Encyclopedia of Medicine given to me by our Master, had conspired with Lin Jun to kill our Master! She then pushed all the blame on me and not only destroyed my looks, she also destroyed my powers as well! At that time, I was barely able to escape with my life thanks to Junior Sister Nan Xiao!"

Elder Tianli was filled with emotion, his eyes were spitting fire.

"Order Master, is Wei Yiyi speaking the truth?"

"Elder Tianli, I..."

Rong Xin tried to explain but was unsure of what to say.

Even though Gu Ruoyun had not come along and was waiting for them outside the city, she had sent the Azure Dragon, one of the Four Divine Spiritual Beasts, to follow after them in secret and protect Wei Yiyi. As such, her plan to conspire with the members of the Medicine Order to get rid of Wei Yiyi would be to no avail.

## Chapter 757: The End (3)

---

"Wei Yiyi, you're spitting venomous slander!" Lin Jun glared at Wei Yiyi hatefully and his eyes were filled with an irrepressible hatred, "Don't think of trying to push your past sins onto someone else! The old Order Master had died by your hand and you have now taken Nan Xiao away! Yet, you're still trying to frame others! Let me tell you this Wei Yiyi; your actions are useless. No one is going to believe you."

As they heard this, the elders on Rong Xin's side began to fling accusations.

"Wei Yiyi, your sins are great and many yet still you want to drag others down with you? Aside from you, who else would be so vicious as to kill the old Order Master?"

"You're simply too disgusting. Our Order Master is kind and just, why would she commit such bloody atrocities? Now, you have the audacity to step into the Medicine Order. Are you not aware that the Medicine Order now belongs to the Immortal Realm? Your actions are equivalent to slapping the Immortal Realm in the face!"

"I'll give you one last chance, let the Order Master go then bow down and apologize for your wrongdoings. Who knows, our Order Master might be feeling extra generous and grant you a less terrible death."

They spoke one after another as they stared at Wei Yiyi with arrogance and chilly expressions.

They looked at her as if she was an idiot.

Could it be that Wei Yiyi was completely unaware of whose territory this is? If she attracts the attention of the Immortal Realms, her death will be assured.

Wei Yiyi smiled, "You accuse me of kidnapping Junior Sister Nan Xiao but where's your proof?"

"Proof?"

Lin Jun sneered, "Guards, bring Nan Xiao's little disciple to me."

Someone responded immediately as soon as he gave the order. Not too long after, a delicate young girl was pushed in front of the crowd.

The young girl looked pale and her eyes were filled with terror. However, when she remembered Rong Xin's threats, she hardened her heart and threw herself at Wei Yiyi.

"It was you! You were the one who took my Master away! Give my Master back to me! Give my Master back to me!"

Boom!

Before she could even go near Wei Yiyi, she was pushed away by the aura in Wei Yiyi's body. Her body fell to the ground as her fine hair fell onto her shoulders. She immediately presented a sorry figure indeed.

"Wei Yiyi, is there anything more you wish to say?" Lin Jun lifted his chin and sneered, "She is Nan Xiao's favorite disciple, her words can't be fake. Also, she had personally witnessed you taking Nan Xiao away. Do you still plan on blaming others?"

"Hehe."

Wei Yiyi giggled coquettishly. She stared smilingly at the young girl on the ground and asked with a smile, "You're certain that it was I who had taken Nan Xiao away?"

The young girl felt even more terrified but she did not show it on her face. Instead, she gritted her teeth and said, "It was you, I saw you taking my Master away with my own eyes!"

"Ling'er, you're such a disappointment!"

Suddenly, a furious voice rang out from outside the courtyard. The crowd then watched as Wu Yue hurriedly walked in. She shot a disappointed look at the pale young girl, "How has Master been

treating you? And this is how you chose to treat her in return? You would listen to Rong Xin's orders and slander your Senior Aunt Wei?"

"Wu Yue, you're still alive?"

Elder Tianli was shocked. Then, astonishment flashed in his eyes, "Also, what do you mean? Has this little girl been bribed?"

"You're lying!"

The young girl instantly grew nervous. She gritted her teeth and said, "Senior Sister Wu Yue, you're the one who has been bribed. You're only interested in saving your own neck and offered your services to Wei Yiyi. But I'm not like you, I owe Master a great debt of gratitude. I will have justice for her even if it means my own death!"



## Chapter 758: The End (4)

---

"Really?"

Just then, a calm voice sounded from further up ahead, causing the young girl's body to freeze on the spot.

She lifted her little face which was about the size of a hand in astonishment, staring in disbelief at the woman who was walking into the courtyard.

"Ma... Master?"

No!

That's impossible!

Didn't Rong Xin take Master away? What is she doing here?

"Nan Xiao!"

When those who were loyal to the old Order Master saw that woman appear in the courtyard, their hearts immediately leaped with joy. They could finally lay down their worries.

"Senior Aunt Wei, I've found the Master."

Wu Yue blinked.

As Wei Yiyi was dragging Rong Xin back to the Medicine Order, she had managed to get the information from Rong Xin to find Nan Xiao! It was a good thing that when Rong Xin had moved the Medicine Order's headquarters, she had also secretly brought Nan Xiao along as well. Hence, she was able to find her and bring her back in such a short time.

"What on earth is going on?!"

Elder Tianli's elderly face sank. His eyes swept across Lin Jun's face which was filled with disbelief and landed upon Rong Xin's ashen face.

"Order Master, can you tell us what's the meaning of this?"

Rong Xin bit her lips, "That's right, I had killed the old Order Master and... I also kidnapped Nan Xiao!"

It has now come to this, she had no other choice but to confess.

After she had spoken, the courtyard fell into silence. The elders who were loyal to Rong Xin could not believe their ears.

They had assumed that the old Order Master's death had something to do with Lin Jun and the Order Master was simply unwilling to implicate her husband.

They would never have thought that it was actually the Order Master herself who had conspired with Lin Jun and murdered the old Order Master in cold blood.

Also, for the sake of plotting against Wei Yiyi, she would not even spare the old Order Master's only daughter!

"Order Master, you are far too much of a disappointment to us."

Elder Tianli sighed disappointedly. Perhaps even he had not expected for it all to come to this.

After all, in the past, he had really believed in Rong Xin.

"Ling'er," Nan Xiao turned towards Ling'er and spoke expressionlessly, "When you were a child, your parents had rejected you. It was I who had taken you in. Now, for them, you would go against Senior Sister Yiyi?"

"Master."

Thud!

The young girl suddenly crawled to her feet and clambered towards Nan Xiao. She then fiercely knocked her head on the ground.

"Please forgive your disciple, I had no other choice. If you're willing, I will give my life to you. Rong Xin had captured my parents and was forcing me to frame Senior Aunt Wei. I had no other choice!"

Her head continued to collide forcefully with the ground and soon became bruised. However, she did not seem to notice this.

"Ling'er, don't forget, if it wasn't for the Master, you would have died long ago!" Wu Yue spoke furiously. "Yet you've betrayed Master for the sake of the parents who had abandoned you. Can you even face up to your conscience?"

Hearing this, the young girl stopped knocking her head against the ground and rose to her feet, "I don't think I've done anything wrong! Even if my parents had a thousand faults, they are still my parents! They are the closest to me in this world! Forget about betraying Master for their sake, I would do anything! I admit that I have sinned against Master but I don't believe that I've done anything wrong!"

"Ling'er, they abandoned you!"

Wu Yue simply could not understand the thoughts running through the girl's mind. Even if the Master was not the one who had given birth to her, she had taken her in as an orphan and brought her up with the best education in cultivation.

She, however, would betray the Master for the sake of the ones who had abandoned her!

## Chapter 759: The End (5)

---

If Wu Yue herself was in this situation, she would never have done it!

In her entire life, her Master was most the important person to her and a benefactor who had given her a second chance at life!

"Senior Sister Wu Yue, you won't understand." The young girl shook her head, "Blood is granted by the Heavens, no one can replace that. If I could ignore my own parents, what kind of a person am I?"

Suddenly, Wu Yue was unsure of what to say.

She knew that if she was to say anything else, this little girl would infuriate her to death.

"Ling'er, there's something I need you to know." Nan Xiao lifted her head and looked at the young girl's delicate features, "Your parents are already dead."

"What?"

The young girl was shaken and her eyes widened in disbelief.

"Master, what did you just say?"

"Rong Xin had murdered your parents! They were dead long ago. There's one more thing that you don't know about." Nan Xiao spoke slowly as she continued to stare at the young girl's face, "Your parents had come to see me last year. They told me that something has happened to your younger brother's health and that they wanted to use your heart as a transplant for him! This also means that they wanted to use your life in exchange for your brother's. I rejected their request. With this in mind, do you still think that they're worth betraying me?"

"That's impossible!"

The young girl shook her head as her body stumbled back

involuntarily. Her small figure trembled continuously in the gentle wind.

"How would they be dead? And why would Father and Mother choose for me to die in my younger brother's place? This is simply impossible! Besides, they had abandoned me years ago because our family was too poor, not because they truly did not love me."

"Do you think that your Master has any reason to lie to you?" Wu Yue smiled curtly, "On one hand, there are your parents who want you dead. On the other is your Master who loves you dearly. In the end, you had chosen someone who wanted you dead! Ling'er, you really should search your soul properly!"

Finally, the young girl could no longer hold it in and burst into tears. Her hand covered her lips tightly as her body trembled incessantly.

"I'm sorry, Master, I'm so sorry..."

Nan Xiao sighed with disappointment, "If you had only betrayed me, I could still forgive you. However, your betrayal has caused Senior Sister Yiyi a lot of trouble. Ling'er, choose to take your own life. This is the last honor I will provide you with."

"Master?"

The young girl put her hand down and stared at Nan Xiao dazedly. When she saw that Nan Xiao had looked away, her heart slowly sank. She lowered her lashes and said, "Master, I understand. I've wronged you greatly and I should, indeed, give my life back to you."

She took one last look at Nan Xiao before slamming herself fiercely against a nearby pillar.

Bang!

A muffled thud sounded and blood trickled down her forehead. The young girl's body slowly crumpled to the ground. Soon, blood stained the entire ground where her body lay.

Nan Xiao shut her eyes and felt heartbroken. Regardless, this little girl was her disciple whom she had raised from a young age and was no different from a foster daughter. Now, how could her heart not ache after forcing her to take her own life?

However, this time, she had crossed a line.

If Senior Sister Yiyi had not found such a good master, perhaps it would have been Senior Sister Yiyi who would end up dead...

"It's your turn now."

Wei Yiyi looked away and smiled coldly, "Rong Xin, Lin Jun, do you know how long I've waited for this day to come? For days and nights on end, I would dream of everything you've done to me!"

# Chapter 760: The Man In Red (1)

---

"You..."

Lin Jun was so shocked that he stumbled back, "Stay away!"

He turned around and tried to escape but was caught by the eagle-eyed Elder Tianli who appeared behind him in a flash and blocked his only way out.

Wei Yiyi curled her lips and smiled as she slowly walked towards Lin Jun, "Don't worry, I won't let you die so easily. If you were to die so easily, how could I ever face our late Order Master? I'll make sure that you lose all your powers, cripple your arms and legs, and make you kneel before the old Order Master's grave to apologize to him repeatedly every day."

Considering the amount of hatred that she feels towards them, how could she grant them an easy way out?

I will turn them into good-for-nothings. They will suffer humiliation and torture before meeting an awful end!

"Aaah!"

Stab!

Wei Yiyi pierced her sword into a vein in Lin Jun's arm. Crimson blood spewed out, dyeing her eyes red.

However, she did not stop there. The sword in her hand moved quickly and soon, all the veins in his arms and legs had been severed! He fell to the ground and was unable to move! All he could do was stare up at Wei Yiyi's smiling face in horror.

"Let me go, I'm begging you to let me go."

He no longer held his previous arrogance as his voice pleaded with her.

"Eh?" Wei Yiyi rubbed her chin and smiled, "I almost forgot that you can still talk..."

She then placed her hand into Lin Jun's mouth and pulled out his tongue before slicing it off with a flash of her blade. This time, despite his extreme agony, he was unable to even scream. His throat could only make mild squeaking noises.

After that, Wei Yiyi's eyes turned towards Rong Xin.

Unsurprisingly, Rong Xin suffered the same fate as Lin Jun. Her hands and legs were crippled and she was turned dumb. She lay in a pool of blood where she had fallen on the ground, unable to move.

"My great vengeance has been fulfilled, it's now time for me to leave."

Wei Yiyi placed her sword back in its sheath and glanced at the two people lying on the ground. Her lips curled into a smile, "Rong Xin, Lin Jun, you'd better confess your sins before the old Order Master's grave for the rest of your lives!"

"Yiyi."

As he realized that Wei Yiyi was about to leave, Elder Tianli hurriedly cried after her, "Previously, the old Order Master had plans on handing the Medicine Order to you. Since Rong Xin is now as good as dead, we'd like you to become the Order Master of the Medicine Order."

Wei Yiyi paused before shaking her head, "I still have some important matters to attend to and I can't take up this position now."

"But..."

"Elder Tianli, this position should be given to Junior Sister Nan Xiao." Wei Yiyi said as she turned towards the crowd behind her and smiled, "Junior Sister Nan Xiao is the daughter of the old Order Master. No one would raise any opposition to having her at the reins but I'd still want you to assist her, Elder Tianli. One last thing, clean up the survivors who were loyal to Rong Xin."



After leaving these instructions, she then turned towards Nan Xiao and slowly walked towards her before taking her hand. A smile hung on her charming face.

"Nan Xiao, thank you so much for saving my life and helping me to escape. I believe that with the Medicine Order in your hands, you definitely won't disappoint the old Order Master. Also..." She paused and produced the book of treasured wisdom before placing it in front of Nan Xiao, "This is the Treasured Encyclopedia of Medicine. It's no longer of any use to me now so I'm giving it to you. I hope that you'll return the Medicine Order to its former glory."

Nan Xiao held onto the book with a tight grip and nodded gently, "Senior Sister Yiyi, don't worry. I won't let yours or Father's hopes down. Leave the Medicine Order to me, you can rest assured and follow after Lady Gu."

## Chapter 761: The Man In Red (2)

---

Wei Yiyi smiled.

Back then, she had followed Gu Ruoyun for the sake of having her revenge and also to snatch the Medicine Order from Rong Xin's hands.

But now, she felt that fighting alongside her was truly the one thing she had wanted to do all along.

"Take care."

She joined her fists and bowed before turning around without another word and slowly disappearing from view.

...

East Peak Mainland.

The land near the border was covered in a layer of brilliant white snow.

At this time, a team was trudging forward with great difficulty through the snow-covered field when a surprised voice suddenly rang out, echoing through the silent field.

"Grand Lord, someone's here."

The one addressed as the Grand Lord was a handsome man dressed in red robes. He had deep facial features and his eyes were very pronounced. His inky black hair was like a black flame which danced in the cold, wintry wind. He raised an eyebrow upon hearing his subordinate's report and stepped out of the crowd to approach the young woman who was lying on the ground.

However, when he laid his eyes upon the woman's face, the man in red robes felt as if someone had just punched him hard in the stomach, causing him to tighten the space between his proud eyebrows. In that instant, his expression froze like ice.

"Yu'er?"

His breathing tensed. After a long pause, he slowly calmed the turmoil in his heart and smiled bitterly.

She looks very much like her, too much alike!

This little girl looks too much like Yu'er in her youth.

"Grand Lord."

The person behind him joined his fist and bowed before asking with reverence, "Should we continue on?"

The man in red nodded before adding, "Bring her along as well. She has fainted here all alone. It would be hard for her to survive if no one saves her."

Hearing this, the group behind the man in red could not help but look at one another. Their Grand Lord has always been known as the grim-faced God of Death. Why on earth would he show mercy to a stranger?

Typically, he would not have even bothered to look twice.

Of course, the man in red knew what the group behind him was thinking but he did not give them any explanation. His eyes gazed upon the woman's pale face as a hint of nostalgia flashed in his eyes.

Yu'er, if our daughter was still by our side, she would probably be around this age...

...

Gu Ruoyun could remember entering the portal from the West Spirit Mainland to the East Peak Mainland. However, she did not expect to encounter a portal storm while in transit. In the end, she had lost consciousness.

What is this place?

Gu Ruoyun felt a jolt and opened her eyes. Her eyes were filled with confusion as she felt the unsteady jolts.

"Xiao Zixie, what happened? Where am I?"

Just as she spoke, Xiao Zixie's childish voice echoed from the depths of her soul, "You lost consciousness after encountering a storm in the portal. I was just about to come out and take you away but a group of people had suddenly appeared so I didn't show myself. They're the ones who've saved you."

Just as Xiao Zixie had finished his explanation, the carriage immediately shook and stopped.

"You're awake?"

The curtain of the carriage was pulled aside and a woman in white stepped out from the carriage. She glanced curtly at Gu Ruoyun, "If you're awake, then it's time for you to leave."

Gu Ruoyun could feel the iciness from the woman's demeanor but did not comment on it. She gently nodded, "There's no need to worry, I don't plan on staying here."

## Chapter 762: The Man In Red (3)

---

"Very well," The woman in white swept her cold gaze towards Gu Ruoyun once again and icily remarked, "It was our Grand Lord who had saved you. If he happens to ask, you will tell him that you left on your own accord. Understood?"

Her bossy tone made Gu Ruoyun furrow her brows. She quickly relaxed them and said, "I'll say this once more, even if you refuse to let me leave, I won't possibly stay."

Just as the woman in white was about to retort, an inquiring voice was heard outside the carriage, "Bai Yin, is that young lady awake? If she's awake, take her to meet the Grand Lord."

Bai Yin relaxed her features before shooting Gu Ruoyun a look and warned, "Remember your words. Now, follow me to go see the Grand Lord. You should know the difference between what you should and shouldn't say."

She then turned around and stepped out of the carriage.

A group of people was seated around a campfire outside the carriage. The most eye-catching amongst them all was the man in red. He was strikingly handsome and looked amiable and approachable. However, his eyes held a haughty and unruly air in them. He seemed like the kind of person who would not even consider the gods at his level.

If my guess is right, this man in red must be their aforementioned Grand Lord.

"You're awake?" The man in red looked at Gu Ruoyun as he cocked his sharp brows and waved her over, "Come, sit."

Gu Ruoyun fell silent. She walked towards the man in red and sat down next to him.

"Your name?"

The man in red turned towards Gu Ruoyun and asked as he handed her a roasted rabbit's leg.

Gu Ruoyun accepted the roasted rabbit's leg, thanked him and replied, "Gu Ruoyun."

"Gu Ruoyun?"

The man in red stroked his chin. Suddenly, he smiled. His smile was beautiful and looked like a light which had shone out in a dark night, illuminating the entire sky.

"That's a very good name indeed."

"And yours?" Gu Ruoyun looked at the man in red and raised an eyebrow. She did not know why but this man somehow feels very familiar and dear to her even though this was the first time she has ever met him.

It was a kind of feeling that made her yearn to be close to him.

"My name? Hehe, it's been so many years. Even I've forgotten my own name. Everyone calls me the Grand Lord Hong Lian. If you don't mind, you may call me Hong Lian. How about it?"

"Alright." Gu Ruoyun nodded and smiled in reply.

Bai Yin's face turned an ugly shade as she noticed the two chatting and laughing away. When the man in red was not paying attention, she took advantage of the situation and sent Gu Ruoyun a few hard looks. Her eyes clearly displayed a sense of urgency.

Gu Ruoyun acknowledged her looks and turned towards the man's perfect features. She paused before saying, "Grand Lord Hong Lian, thank you for saving my life. However, I have some matters to attend to so I'll take my leave now.

Phew!

When she saw that Gu Ruoyun had finally asked to leave, Bai Yin heaved a sigh of relief. She was really afraid that this woman would shamelessly insist on staying after meeting the Grand Lord!

The Grand Lord was also giving her so much special treatment too.

With her around, I'm afraid that it might be even more difficult to enter the Grand Lord's heart in the future.

"You're leaving?"

The man in red was shaken and he knit his brows tightly, "This snowfield is extremely dangerous. Spiritual beasts breed like flies here. Besides, it's night time. Where are you going? How about this, let me finish my business, and I'll send you off. Alright?"

## Chapter 763: The Man In Red (4)

---

Swish!

Bai Yin's expression changed drastically and her eyes showed greater urgency. She sent a few other looks in succession towards Gu Ruoyun, hoping that she would catch her meaning to hurry up and leave.

If she feels that she was not welcomed, Gu Ruoyun would naturally reject the offer to stay. She stood up and said, "There's no need, I can leave on my own and I won't trouble you any further. Also, you've helped me so I'll owe you one. If you need anything in the future, I'll pay you back in kind."

The scariest thing in the world was not a debt of gratitude but owing a debt of gratitude. Debts of gratitude were usually the most difficult to return.

Even though Gu Ruoyun had a really good impression of this man in red, she was not willing to owe him a debt of gratitude.

"No," The man in red frowned, "Allow me to finish my business and I'll send you on your way. Besides, in saving you, I never had any desire for you to return your debt to me. I helped you because you look a lot like an old friend of mine."

"An old friend?"

Gu Ruoyun was mildly stunned as she stared in confusion at the man in red.

"That's correct."

Upon mentioning his old friend, the man in red's expression softened. His initially haughty and unruly eyes filled with gentleness. One need not overanalyze to know that this old friend was his lover.

"She was my wife and the love of my life. All these years, I've



risked life and limb to find her as quickly as I could! In order to complete my goal, I've journeyed for almost twenty years. During these twenty years, I've never even returned to see my son and daughter. My poor daughter was left alone by her parents from the moment she had been born. I didn't even get to name her. Now, looking at you, I feel as if I'm looking at my own daughter. If she were by my side, she would be about your age."

Hearing this, Gu Ruoyun could not help but be reminded of Gu Tian and his wife. Her lips curled into an agonized grimace.

"By the way, little girl, I haven't asked you what you were doing out here all alone? Where are your parents?" The man in red snapped out of his reminiscence and asked with a warm smile on his handsome face.

"My parents?" Gu Ruoyun spoke calmly, "They've passed on."

To her, her father in her past life, Xia Ming, was indeed no different from a dead man. As for Gu Tian and his wife, their whereabouts were still unknown and no one knows if they were dead or alive. So what if she believes that they were still alive? After so many years, there has not been a single piece of news. Hence, she had been unable to confirm anything.

The man in red's eyes moved and he placed his large hand on Gu Ruoyun's shoulder.

"My apologies, I should not have brought this up."

"It's fine," Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "You've never gone back to see your son and daughter in the last twenty years? Not even once?"

Hearing this, the man in red laughed bitterly and shook his head. His face looked utterly helpless as he spoke, "I've lived for the sake of vengeance over the past twenty years but my enemies are too powerful, how could I bear to drag my children down with me? Once I've had my vengeance and found my wife, I'll go back and

look for them! Every day that I don't kill my powerful enemies is another day that I cannot return to my family!"

These were his absolute convictions for those many years.

Who could have ever imagined the cruel life he has had to suffer for the past twenty years? However, he has been rather fortunate to finally reach this stage after having been hunted like an ant. All this time, these convictions were the only thing which had continued to motivate him!

"Little girl, it's a rare opportunity for me today to have met a little girl near my daughter's age so I can't help but want to say a few more words." The man in red smiled and lowered his eyelids to gaze upon the young woman's delicate features. A hint of absent-mindedness flashed in his eyes, "If you don't mind, would you like to become my goddaughter?"

## Chapter 764: The Man In Red (5)

---

"Grand Lord!"

Bai Yin's face immediately changed just as the man in red spoke. She threw Gu Ruoyun a particularly ugly look then turned back to the man in red.

"This woman's origins are unknown to us. Who knows which organization she had come from? Please, Grand Lord, I implore you to think carefully so that we won't invite a wolf into our den!"

"I've made my decision." The man in red waved his hand and said, "As long as the little girl is willing, she will be my goddaughter from now on and the Lady of the Red Lotus Territory! None shall be allowed to treat her with discourtesy!"

At this moment, Bai Yin looked as if she had just swallowed a fly. Her expression was a terrible sight to behold. She clenched her fist tightly and shot Gu Ruoyun a warning look.

Gu Ruoyun did not respond, no one could tell what lay behind her clear and cold gaze.

After a long pause, she lifted her head and turned towards the man's handsome visage before slowly replying, "I accept."

"Hahaha!"

The man in red burst into laughter. His laughter was so abrupt that it destroyed the silence of the night.

"Wonderful, this is simply wonderful! Little girl, from now on, you are my daughter. If anyone dares to lay their hand on you, just mention my name. As long as I'm around, you can go anywhere you please!"

Yu'er, this little girl really looks a lot like you. Please forgive me for making her a goddaughter on my own accord but every time I look at her, I can't help but think of our own daughter...

Perhaps because our daughter is on a completely different mainland from us that the Heavens took pity on my yearning for her so they had placed this little girl before me.

Bai Yin clenched her fists tightly. Her eyes, which had been initially cautious, now reflected her anger. She looked as if Gu Ruoyun had just snatched her personal possession from her...

All these years, his subordinates had taken note of the Grand Lord's deep feelings for the Madam.

She herself knew that she would never be able to come between the Grand Lord and the Madam nor did she harbor any hopes of becoming his wife. To her, as long as she could remain by his side, that would be enough.

However, even though she had accompanied the Grand Lord for almost twenty years, she has never ever received a smile from him.

How could this woman, whom he's only just met, able to make the Grim-Faced God of Death, the Grand Lord Hong Lian, laugh so happily?

What does she have that I don't?

Was it simply because she looks a lot like the Madam? Even if she looks like her, they are not the same person!

Jealousy gnawed at Bai Yin's heart like a worm. She took a deep breath and slowly suppressed the spitting rage in her heart.

From the start of it all, Gu Ruoyun had never given Bai Yin a second glance.

She had previously agreed to leave not because she was afraid of Bai Yin, she simply had not wished to trouble others. Now, she has chosen to stay not for any other reason but the close and dear feelings that she had received from the man.

To Gu Ruoyun, who had never received a father's love since birth, this was a deadly feeling!

"Grand Lord..." Bai Yin bit her lip, "The road ahead is too dangerous. If we bring her along, she might drag us down, so..."

The man in red stared at Bai Yin emotionlessly.

His look was like a sharp sword pulling everything that Bai Yin was about to say into an abrupt stop in her throat. Her face instantly turned pale.

She had forgotten that when the Grand Lord has made a decision, he does not like anyone to butt their way in!

"Bai Yin, you've overstepped yourself."

The man spoke calmly as a cold light flashed in his haughty and unruly eyes, "On account of the fact that you've followed me for over twenty years, I'll give you one chance. There will not be another! If you disobey my orders one more time, you will return to the Territory and accept your punishment!"

# Chapter 765: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves (1)

---

Thud!

Bai Yin immediately knelt on the ground fearfully. Her pale white face was filled with restraint as she lowered her gaze to better mask the raging flame in her eyes.

"Please forgive me, Grand Lord."

What does receiving the Grand Lord's punishment really mean? Bai Yin knows it well.

Aside from the agonizing pain of the flesh, she would also be stripped of all her responsibilities and would no longer be allowed to stay by the Grand Lord's side! This also means that once she has been sent back to the territory, she would never be allowed to follow this man around again.

To Bai Yin, who was in love with the man in red, this was a fate more agonizing than death.

The man in red swept a stern gaze across the faces surrounding him. His proud voice pierced through the night air and drummed into every ear, "Take note, all of you. From now on, Gu Ruoyun is my adopted daughter so her position in the Red Lotus Territory is second only to mine. If anyone dares to treat her with disrespect, they will be disrespecting me as well. I'm sure all of you understand the consequences?"

Rustle!

Instantly, the men and women around the campfire rose to their feet and knelt down. Their voices rang with reverence.

"Your subordinates greet you, my Lady!"

The man in red nodded in satisfaction before speaking coldly, "You may all rise. Bai Yin, remember. Next time you treat her with

disrespect, you will accept the punishment on your own."

"Yes, Grand Lord."

After this, everyone got back to their feet and sat around the campfire again.

Bai Yin felt absolutely insulted but she kept her face calm. Instead, she stood aside respectfully.

The night was silent. As a night breeze blew, one could not help but feel a chill in this northern snowfield.

"Something's on the move!"

Suddenly, the man in red's expression changed and a cold light flashed in his proud and unruly eyes.

"Awoo!"

Just then, something howled from not too far away. The sound pierced through the night sky and caused everyone's hair to stand on end.

"It's the Snow Spirit Wolves of the snowfields!"

Bai Yin's expression changed.

The Snow Spirit Wolves were not be the most ferocious spiritual beasts in the snowfields but they usually run in packs to terrorize humans. Also, the weakest amongst them would usually be at the rank of a Martial Emperor. There could be numerous Martial Honors in a pack!

The man in red sighed and put down the roasted rabbit's leg in his hand. His lips then curled into a magnificent and unmatched smile.

"I didn't think that we would end up without a moment's peace on our first night here in the snowfields. Since that's the case, let's fight! Snow Spirit Wolves are not intelligent spiritual beasts so it's no use reasoning with them, not even threats would deter them."

He was not worried about himself. After all, this pack of Snow Spirit Wolves do not have the right to claim his attention.

However, he was worried about Gu Ruoyun.

He did not know why but he could not detect the spiritual fluctuations from this little girl's body! She did not seem to be any different from the average person. However, the man in red knew that this little girl was not an average person with zero cultivation skills.

Otherwise, she would not have had the courage to venture into the treacherous snowfield.

As such, when faced with so many Snow Spirit Wolves, she would still be in great danger.

The man in red furrowed his brows at the thought before slowly relaxing and smiling, "Little girl, stay with me. Don't leave my side, not even for half a step. Understood?"

Gu Ruoyun nodded, "I understand."

"Good," The man in red then noticed a Snow Spirit Wolf charging towards him. Suddenly, a hurricane arose and the space between his brows grew domineering and unyielding. His voice was sharp and aggressive as it boomed through the night sky, "You're merely a pack of b\*stards yet you dare to oppose me! Since that's the case, we're going to have a change on the menu tonight!"



# Chapter 766: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves (2)

---

The Snow Spirit Wolves did not seem to hear the man in red's words as they howled and charged forward. As they began their attack, the snowfield instantly filled with a layer of thick, white fog which lowered the temperature by a few degrees.

Bai Yin clutched the sword in her hand and stared nervously at the oncoming Snow Spirit Wolves. The space between her brows was on full alert.

"Kill!"

The man in red raised and lowered his hand slowly under the clear and cold moonlit sky.

After hearing his order, everyone there drew their weapons and charged towards the Snow Spirit Wolves, completely disregarding their large numbers.

Such was the way of the people of Red Lotus Territory!

In this territory, they would only listen to the man in red's every order! Even if the Grand Lord had asked them to die, they would end their life without hesitation.

Amidst the snowfield, the flash of red robes was particularly striking to the eye. It illuminated the black night like a red, scorching sun.

The man in red did not make any move. Instead, he silently watched the battle on the snowfield as the deep space between his brows filled with absolute confidence and haughtiness. He did not seem the least bit worried about his subordinates losing to these b\*stards on the snowfield.

"Are you not going to help?"

As she stared at the people who were fighting with great

difficulty, Gu Ruoyun turned towards the man in red and asked.

"If I have to do everything, what's the point in having them?" The man in red raised his brows and his voice was full of confidence, "Do you know how to make your forces to terrifying, so much so that others dread you?"

Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow but did not say anything else. She seemed as if she was waiting for the man in red's next words.

"It's insanity!" The man in red sniggered and turned to Gu Ruoyun, "There's no use in me going insane on my own. If I want others to dread me, I needed a group of madmen! Thus, my subordinates are all madmen who do not wish to live! On this mainland, the fights are cruel. Only the winners are kings and the losers are enemies! As long as we win, it doesn't matter what tactics we use, we would still be king! And only with persistence can one survive on this merciless mainland. This is the conclusion of my experiences over the years. If it wasn't for the fact that I dared to persist against others, I would not have reached this stage."

This was what he had taught his subordinates as well!

They would only experience growth if he let go and let them fight!

They would no longer feel scared about getting hurt! If they had never experienced pain, how could they then grow stronger? No one's journey can be smooth sailing all the time and everyone would have to experience the hurt from childhood to adulthood before they could end up standing at the peak of humanity!

Gu Ruoyun was quiet for a moment.

The man in red is not like me after all. Xiao Hei's has infinite space to allow my subordinates to grow and I also have countless pills to nurture them.

Even so, the members of the Devil Sect have emerged from many

battles. Otherwise, the Devil Sect would not have experienced such a rapid growth.

A powerful cultivator who has never experienced danger cannot be considered as a truly powerful cultivator.

The battle on the field grew more intense. Countless Snow Spirit Wolves howled and fell into a pool of blood as they died. Even so, the defenders were not much better off either. Some have even lost their strength to fight back.

The initially clean-looking white snow was now covered with blood.

Bai Yin's face grew increasingly pale. Under the piercing winter winds, her every exhale brought a hazy white fog. She clutched the blood-drenched longsword in her hand and charged towards the pack of Snow Spirit Wolves once again.

# Chapter 767: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves (3)

---

"Awoo!"

Just then, an angry howl rang out from a snowfield next to them.

When they heard the extreme anger in the howl, some of the defenders of a lower rank immediately felt a little unsteady and nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

"A high-level Martial Honor Snow Spirit Wold?"

The man in red raised an eyebrow, "It seems that this time, I'll have to deal with this spiritual beast personally. Bai Yin, I want you and the other to protect Yun'er."

Whoosh!

As soon as he had finished speaking, the flash of red robes ran towards the nearby snowy ground like a bolt of flame. Soon, he had appeared in front of the Snow Spirit Wolf.

The man's red robes were like fire as he floated in the air. His pronounced brows were gently raised upwards, making him look a cold god of the inferno. He chided coolly, "Long-mouthed b\*stard! You dare to oppose me, the Grand Lord Hong Lian. You're looking for death!"

Bang!

All everyone could see was the man in red's heavily callused hand slamming against the Snow Spirit Wolf's head. Without any warning, the Snow Spirit Wolf's head split open and it howled as it fell to the ground.

The man placed his hand behind him then stood with his hands clasped behind his back amidst the wild winds. His long, inky black hair danced in the wind and he stood with his back towards the crowd. Under the night sky, the man in red's robes was an

extremely striking sight.

He shot a pitiless look at the Snow Spirit Wolf's body on the ground. He then slowly turned around and headed back towards Gu Ruoyun.

Suddenly, a howl sounded and a powerful force emanated from the trees next to Gu Ruoyun. It then charged towards the woman fiercely.

"There's still one more Snow Spirit Wolf? This isn't good!"

The man in red's usually steady expression suddenly changed. He hurriedly cried out and rushed forward, "Long-mouthed b\*stard! Stop right there! Little girl, hurry and get out of the way!"

But it was clearly too late.

The Snow Spirit Wolf had come out so suddenly and was only a few steps away from Gu Ruoyun...

Boom!

A burst of anger erupted from the man in red's body as if he was attempting to ignite the entire snowfield. His entire being was like a flaming ball of fire as he charged towards the Snow Spirit Wolf.

At that moment, Gu Ruoyun finally made her move and allowed her Martial Honor coercion to erupt from her body.

A longsword also appeared from thin air and floated in front of her.

The sword was glowing with a sharp white light that shot up into the sky. A dragon's roar then rang out from the blade. It turned into a sharp blade of bright, white light and sliced towards the Snow Spirit Wolf's face.

Splatter!

Fresh blood spewed from the Snow Spirit Wolf's head in a torrent and dyed the sky red. The originally fearsome Snow Spirit Wolf trembled before falling in front of Gu Ruoyun into a pool of its own

blood.

It probably was not aware of how it had died. How had this woman, who looked frail and weak, managed to kill it?

The man in red was stunned and his body was suspended in midair. He stared in surprise at the woman's clear and cold features.

"A mid-level Martial Honor?"

That's right, when the woman had made her move, I had clearly sensed her power.

A twenty-year-old mid-level Martial Honor? This little girl is completely abnormal!

However, when he saw that Gu Ruoyun was safe and unscathed after killing a Snow Spirit Wolf, the man in red felt the rage in his heart calm down. He laughed bitterly, "Sigh, it seems that I've been worrying about nothing. You, little girl, are full of deep secrets. I actually didn't manage to see through your powers! However, I'm now your godfather after all yet you would still keep your powers from me."

# Chapter 768: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves (4)

---

Gu Ruoyun detected the resentment in the man's voice but she merely shrugged her shoulders, "It's not that I'm keeping it from you on purpose, you never asked me."

Hearing this, the man in red instantly fell silent.

Was that not the case? I had not been able to see through her capabilities and I never asked her about it either. It's not like she had kept it from me on purpose.

The man in red smiled at the thought then replied indulgently, "You really are a little fox. Fine, fine. It was indeed my fault for not asking you and you had not kept it from me on purpose. It's getting late now. You go and get some rest, I still have some matters to attend to."

Then, the man in red turned around to an obviously scared silly Bai Yin. His initial indulgence and gentleness towards Gu Ruoyun instantly reverted to his cool and proud visage. His handsome face was carved in icy lines. He stared down emotionlessly at the woman in white before him.

"Bai Yin, do you know your crime?"

Thud!

Bai Yin hurriedly knelt to the ground with cold sweat dripping from her brow, "Grand Lord, this subordinate had been inadequate in protecting her. Please, Grand Lord, hold me accountable."

As she spoke, she bit her lip fiercely.

This woman certainly has a long life!

At that moment when the Snow Spirit Wolf had appeared before Gu Ruoyun, Bai Yin's heart had not been filled with fear but with joy!

If Gu Ruoyun was to die, then she will be the only one to remain by the Grand Lord's side! She would never let any other woman aside from the Madam to hold the Grand Lord's attention! So, she had not saved Gu Ruoyun on purpose.

"Inadequate in protecting her?" The man in red sneered, "You think that by admitting your inadequacy, I would absolve you for neglecting your duties? I had asked you to protect her and that means that even if you had been faced with fearsome spiritual beasts, you would give your life to protect her. Instead, you've tried to wriggle away from your responsibility by admitting your inadequacy when in fact you've neglected your duties."

Bai Yin's expression turned extremely pale and cold sweat rolled down from her brow.

"Grand Lord, this subordinate has made a mistake. Please, Grand Lord, spare me this once on account of the fact that I've fought by your side for twenty years."

She kowtowed fiercely and her forehead was soon red and bruised. However, she did not seem to notice the pain and continued to kowtow.

"After this job is done, you can go back to the Territory and accept your punishment. There's also no need for you to follow me around anymore." The man in red lowered his gaze and stared at the woman who was kneeling on the ground. His voice was cold and merciless. "I'll say this again, I'm only giving you one more chance. If you cross me a second time, you will immediately return to the Territory and accept your punishment!"

Bai Yin's expression was now ten thousand shades uglier. Her heart now pushed all her past wrongs towards Gu Ruoyun.

If she had not agreed to stay, the Grand Lord would not be treating me this way now!

This was all because of this vicious woman!



"Grand Lord, you've only met her once. You don't even know who she is or if she's an undercover agent from that particular organization. Why do you trust her so much?" Bai Yin pointed at Gu Ruoyun and cried out angrily, "I've followed you for the past twenty years and I've always been loyal to you. Now, because of this woman, you would want to punish me like this? I don't understand why!"

Smack!

A red light flashed and hit her squarely on the chest. Bai Yin's body instantly flew out of the way before landing harshly on the ground.

She raised her pretty eyes in astonishment. In that instant, the man's knife-like glare shot into her eyes and cut through her heart at the same time. The pain was agonizing.

She has never left his side not even for a day for the past twenty years. At the end of everything else, this man, whom she would never be able to forget for the rest of her life, was treating her in this manner for the sake of a woman he had only just met.

# Chapter 769: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves (5)

---

Bai Yin took a deep breath before she crawled towards the man. At that moment, no one noticed the anger and unwillingness in her eyes as well as an indistinct murderous intent.

"Your wish is my command! Once I'm finished with this job, I will return to the Territory and accept my punishment."

The man in red said nothing. Similarly, he showed no sign of mercy.

If Gu Ruoyun's powers had not been so formidable, she would have ended up dead instead of the Snow Spirit Wolf.

Thus, he would never forgive Bai Yin!

"It's getting late now, let's all get some rest. One more thing, Yun Qing, Xue Kuang, I want you two to take care of the bodies. These will become our next meal."

"Yes, Grand Lord."

The two men addressed as Yun Qing and Xue Kuang stepped out and replied respectfully.

"Alright. Everyone else, go get some rest. At the same time, put Yun'er's tent next to mine."

The man in red took a last look at everyone else before entering his tent.

When everyone was going about their duties, Bai Yin took a deep breath and walked towards Gu Ruoyun. She lowered her eyelids and asked, "I had allowed you to leave so why won't you leave?"

Gu Ruoyun looked at Bai Yin and calmly replied, "I previously had agreed to leave not because you asked me to, but because I wanted to leave! No one in this entire world can order me to do

anything."

"I don't care what you say, you had promised me to leave but you're still here! You've broken your promise." Bai Yin spoke with some measure of emotion and her pretty eyes glared angrily at Gu Ruoyun, "Besides, do you think that the Grand Lord is taking you in because he likes you? It's because you look too much like the Madam and he has asked you to stay because he yearns for the Madam too much. Otherwise, why would he take you in as his goddaughter? So, don't you start dreaming about flying above the branches and turning into a phoenix. In the Grand Lord's heart, you are only a shadow of the Madam. If you have any sense of tact, leave as soon as you can. You'll only hurt yourself in the end."

Bai Yin had purposely lowered her voice so no one else around could hear her words aside from Gu Ruoyun.

Gu Ruoyun did not speak. Regardless of whatever reason I previously had for leaving, I've already agreed to stay. This time, I may have gone back on my word but if I was to get another chance, I would still have made the same choice.

It's all because this man stirs a very close and familiar feeling in me, he makes my heart feel very warm.

"Are you done?" After a long pause, she lifted her head and stared at Bai Yin who was about to continue jabbering incessantly, "If you're done, I'm going to go and get some rest."

"Gu Ruoyun!" Bai Yin's eyes darkened and she spat icily, "Why would you degrade yourself and become the shadow of another? Are there no men on this earth anymore? Why must you cling to the Grand Lord? The Grand Lord is head-over-heels in love with the Madam, he will never hold you!"

I've been by his side for twenty whole years and I've never been able to enter that man's heart.

This woman, however, has only just appeared and she wants to

take the Madam's place in the Grand Lord's heart? Dream on! Even with the fact that she looks like the Madam, this was impossible!

Gu Ruoyun slowly turned around. Her clear and cold eyes fell upon Bai Yin as she calmly raised the corners of her lips and said, "Since I've accepted him as my godfather, in my heart, he is like a father to me. Are you fighting for the justice of the Madam you've been talking about, or... For yourself?"

# Chapter 770: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit (1)

---

Bai Yin froze. She looked absolutely full of rage and hatred, almost as if Gu Ruoyun had seen right through her.

For twenty years, she had always remained quietly by the Grand Lord's side and has carefully concealed her feelings and conflicts from him because she understood that the Grand Lord loves the Madam deeply. If he ever found out about her feelings for him, he would have chased her out of the Red Lotus Territory.

As such, she had buried her feelings into the deepest recesses of her heart and used the Madam's name to fight for justice and get rid of women who harbored any intentions towards the Grand Lord! True enough, not only did the Grand Lord did not only not punish her, but he praised her as well.

Now, this woman has actually pierced through my true intentions!

That's right!

I had got rid of those women not for the Madam's sake but for my own!

The Madam has been missing for so many years. No one knows if she's even alive and perhaps she's not even on this earth anymore. If this was the case, he will forget about that woman sooner or later. By then, my efforts in staying by his side for such a long time and silently giving so much to him for so many years, well, any man would be moved by my actions.

Besides, the Grand Lord was not a person with a heart of steel. He was simply too devoted to the Madam. If the Madam was no longer alive, how could a man who only puts up a cold, hard-hearted front but is soft-hearted deep down bear to leave a woman feeling dejected over him?

When that time comes, I can tell the Grand Lord of my love for

him as well as offer my company and devotion to him.

Gu Ruoyun glanced at Bai Yin who was now immersed in her own imagination and said nothing more. She turned around and headed towards her tent, slowly disappearing under the clear and cold moonlit sky...

In the wide tent, a young boy dressed in purple robes was sitting on the side of the bed. He swung his legs back and forth and smiled as he watched Gu Ruoyun undress.

"What are you doing out here?" Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow, "I want to rest so you better go back into the Ancient Divine Pagoda."

Xiao Zixie blinked as an evil and impish smile flashed on his adorable face.

"I want to sleep with you."

Gu Ruoyun's expression immediately turned black. She rejected him without any courtesy, "No!"

Xiao Zixie jumped from the bed and threw his soft, cotton-candy-like body into Gu Ruoyun's arms. He lifted his large eyes which were glistening with tears and stared pitifully up at Gu Ruoyun.

"I don't want to stay in the Ancient Divine Pagoda, I want to sleep with you."

"Zixie!" Gu Ruoyun gritted her teeth and called out the little boy's name.

"I'm not Zixie now, I'm Xiao Zixie." The little man cocked his head to one side and stared evilly at Gu Ruoyun. He then added, "I'm at childhood stage so I'm still a child!"

Gu Ruoyun's expression grew increasingly ugly. She did not care if this phoenix was now at the adult stage or childhood stage. After all, Zixie in the past had left a deep impression on her. Even with this smooth and immature little face, she could not help but remember that handsome and demonic man.

"No."

Gu Ruoyun yanked the little boy up in the air with one hand and spoke threateningly, "I'm giving you a choice; do you want to return to the Ancient Divine Pagoda on your own or do you want me to throw you back in?"

Xiao Zixie pouted and replied pitifully, "I'll go, I'll go. Jeez, why are you so fierce?"

He then struggled for a bit and broke free from Gu Ruoyun's hand. He glanced pitifully at Gu Ruoyun again before turned into a wave of purple light and disappearing before her very eyes.

## Chapter 771: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit (2)

---

Gu Ruoyun heaved a sigh of relief. Ever since Zixie had been reborn, he had changed in every aspect imaginable. However, his fondness for teasing her was something which has never changed.

"Little girl, are you asleep?"

Suddenly, the man's warm voice sounded from outside the tent.

Gu Ruoyun shook, "No."

"Mm. I'm coming in."

The man in red stepped in from outside the tent. He frowned as he observed Gu Ruoyun's living quarters seriously. A glint flashed in his proud eyes, "I heard voices in here so I came by to have a look. What's going on? Is someone causing trouble for you?"

Gu Ruoyun paused and shook her head, "No, perhaps you had been hearing things."

"Really?" The man in red looked suspicious. Suddenly, he smiled gently, "Perhaps I had been mistaken. However, if anyone dares to bully you, come find me immediately no matter who it is. Do you understand?"

Clearly, the man in red could not stop worrying about Gu Ruoyun.

A sense of warmth enveloped Gu Ruoyun's heart. She understood that her godfather was afraid that Bai Yin would trouble her out of her dissatisfaction for being punished. He had specifically come to reassure her.

Still, she has never cared for people like Bai Yin so why would she rat her out to her godfather?

Gu Ruoyun replied, "Godfather, don't you worry, I'll let you know if anyone bullies me."

"Alright," The man in red heaved a sigh of relief. His pronounced



eyes and brows were filled with joy, "Then, I can relax. Have a good rest. We still have to push forward on our journey tomorrow. There's one more thing; remember that you are the Lady of the Red Lotus Territory. You are a goddaughter to me, the Grand Lord Hong Lian! If anyone bullies you and you find yourself in a situation where you can fight for yourself, you take care of it on your own! However, if you are unable to take the fight, come and look for me! As my daughter, you need not act with fear. You have my full support behind you so you can rest assured and boldly do as you wish. Understood?"

Gu Ruoyun nodded, "I understand."

"It's good that you do."

The man in red smiled and said, "I'm going to get some rest, remember to sleep early as well."

He then turned and left without waiting for Gu Ruoyun's reply.

Gu Ruoyun's pupils narrowed as she watched him leave. She spoke through her soul and asked, "Xiao Zixie, tell me, is this man more powerful than Supreme Jin?"

"He's indeed more powerful."

From within her soul, Xiao Zixie's childish voice rang out after a long pause.

Even though Zixie had just been reborn, his memories from his past life had remained intact. Naturally, he would still have an impression of Supreme Jin! Of course, that impression was sensed through his place in the Ancient Divine Pagoda.

Even so, Xiao Zixie could still sense that this man's power was much stronger than Supreme Jin's.

"How about when compared to you?" Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow and asked.

Xiao Zixie had nothing to say.

Just as Gu Ruoyun had assumed that he was not going to answer the question, his child-like voice spoke up once again.

"I've just been born, I'm still at the childhood stage! I've only been in this world for less than a year!"

This means that he could not possibly defeat the man in red.

"However," Xiao Zixie paused and continued, "In another three to five years, he would never be able to catch up to me no matter how hard he tries. You can't compare a newborn baby to a man who has lived for over ten years but that friend of yours, Supreme Jin, is certainly no match for me."

# Chapter 772: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit (3)

---

This was the reality of the situation.

Even though Zixie was strong and powerful with unlimited potential, he had only just hatched from his egg and still needed time for his powers to grow fully. He could not possibly be invincible from the moment he hatched.

"Fine. I won't overanalyze it, I'll get some rest first."

Gu Ruoyun smiled serenely as she lay down and said, "This is my first day on the East Peak Mainland. I don't know what's coming for me next so I better take care of my mental capabilities. I'll need to be ready for whatever lies ahead."

Actually, for someone at Gu Ruoyun's rank, one can actually keep going without sleep. However, a good sleep can increase one's mental capacity. As such, to most cultivators, as long as they don't need to increase their power in a short time, they would use sleep to raise their alertness.

The next day.

The morning sun shone over the entire snowfield.

Gu Ruoyun has just emerged from her tent when she found the man in red standing under the sunlight.

The man noticed Gu Ruoyun and turned to smile gently at her, "Yun'er, you're awake? We will be continuing our journey now."

Gu Ruoyun nodded and asked, "By the way, I haven't asked you this but what are we doing in this snowfield?"

"We are here for the Mysterious Cloud Fruit." The man in red calmly responded.

The Mysterious Cloud Fruit?

Gu Ruoyun felt shaken. The Mysterious Cloud Fruit is considered to be one of the best medicinal herbs on the East Peak Mainland! It

was said that one could only find one stump in over ten thousand years! In addition, it only exists in the deeper recesses of the snowfield. Many have narrowly escaped death and still have not been able to retrieve it.

The Mysterious Cloud Fruit can give a high-level Martial Supreme one-tenth of a chance to break through to the rank of a Martial Saint.

Even though it was only one-tenth of a chance, it has attracted countless cultivators to fight over it.

After all, on this mainland, Martial Saints were as rare as the feathers of a phoenix and horn of a unicorn! In order to break through to the rank of a Martial Saint, even one-tenth of a chance was enough for them to give up their lives for a fight!

No wonder!

No wonder this man in red had journeyed to this snowfield. It had all been for the sake of finding the Mysterious Cloud Fruit. However, the Mysterious Cloud Fruit is extremely rare. There was still about one-tenth of hope in finding it but many have lost their lives in this snowfield without even getting an inkling of where the Mysterious Cloud Fruit could be found.

Bai Yin scoffed coldly as her cold glare swept across Gu Ruoyun's thoughtful expression. She simply could not understand it. The journey to find the Mysterious Cloud Fruit was such a crucial matter, why had the Grand Lord revealed it to this woman so casually?

Also, he has decided to bring her along!

"Little girl, this snowfield is extremely dangerous. The Snow Spirit Wolves we encountered last night were at the lowest rung of the food chain. There will be far more powerful spiritual beasts on the road ahead. By then, you must stay by my side. You aren't allowed to take even half a step away from me, this is the only way

for me to protect you."

This time, I won't be leaving her with anyone one else!

The events from last night were already carved deeply into his mind's eye. If he had left her with another incompetent bodyguard, he would not be able to bear the consequences.

He would only feel more assured when he was protecting her personally!

"Grand Lord."

Bai Yin gritted her teeth and approached the Grand Lord. She joined her fists and bowed, "Please, Grand Lord, give me a chance to redeem myself. I will definitely protect her Ladyship well on the road ahead."

She certainly was not lying.

In matters of vital importance, harming Gu Ruoyun was not at the top of the list. Instead, she needed the chance to pursue the Grand Lord once again.

If I lose the right to pursue him, what chance do I stand in entering his heart?

## Chapter 773: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit (4)

---

"There's no need," The man in red glanced over at Bai Yin as he replied coldly, "Once this job is done, you will return to the Territory and accept your punishment! I won't give you a second chance!"

Bai Yin's body trembled and her face drained of color. She knew that this time, she had run out of chances.

"Let's go."

The man in red no longer bothered to look at Bai Yin as he waved his hand and gave the order.

"Yes, Grand Lord."

Everyone joined the fists and replied in unison.

While they all felt sympathy for Bai Yin, she had brought it upon herself. No one else could take the blame.

How could she be unaware of the Grand Lord's temperament after following the Grand Lord for so many years?

The Grand Lord has always been the kind of person who would stand by his decisions, no one can change his mind.

The Grand Lord had already let her off the first time she opposed him! Instead, she then vented her anger upon her Ladyship and paid no heed to the Grand Lord's orders, neglecting in her duties to protect the Lady! As the person in charge of the Red Lotus Territory, the Grand Lord would not spare her so easily.

If it was not for the fact that this job was slightly more dangerous, he probably would have already sent her back to the Territory.

Bai Yin clutched her longsword tightly as she stared hatefully at the person following the man in red. No one saw the way she had glared at Gu Ruoyun — her eyes were as sharp as the blade of a

sword.

If looks could kill, Bai Yin would have already dismembered Gu Ruoyun into ten thousand pieces.

During the next part of the journey, they encountered numerous ferocious spiritual beasts. In general, most of the spiritual beasts were at the stage of a high-level Martial Honor. However, because the man in red was a Martial Supreme, regardless of how many spiritual beasts tried to attack them, it was difficult for them to escape the fate of having their lives cut short.

As such, during the journey, Gu Ruoyun had not needed to do anything. All she had to do was to relax and stay by that man's side.

"If I'm not mistaken, the Mysterious Cloud Fruit should be inside."

The group had stopped outside a snow-covered forest.

The man in red gazed fixedly at the dense forest in front of them and spoke slowly, "This is the deepest end of the snowfield and is also the most dangerous place. You must all be more cautious. This will not be like the outside of the forest where the highest rank we had encountered were high-level Martial Honors."

In the snow-covered forest, one could barely sense a fairly discernable power. This power was so strong that it sent tremors through the hearts of many.

When he sensed this powerful force, the man in red's heart slowly sank.

"We'll continue on!"

The man in red slowly relaxed his sharp, furrowed brows as he ordered in a deep voice.

Be it man or dragon who is residing at the deep end of this snowfield, I won't let them stop me from finding the Mysterious

## Cloud Fruit!

...

Gu Ruoyun had initially thought that in such a well-known harsh area like this snowfield that there would not be a lot of people around but she realized that she had been mistaken. Once they stepped into the deep end of the snowfield, she found out that many others have also arrived in the area. Some of them were even at the rank of a Martial Supreme!

"What's going on?"

The man in red was astounded as well. He frowned gently. This shouldn't be happening, these people are forces that are near invincible and now, they've all gathered in this snowy forest?

This situation was extremely suspicious!

"Godfather," Gu Ruoyun smiled mildly and turned towards the man in red, "Has news of your search for the Mysterious Cloud Fruit been leaked out?"

The man in red shook his head, "The Mysterious Cloud Fruit grows inside the forests of the snow field. This was something which many are aware of. Normally, there will be others who would risk their lives for the sake of the Mysterious Cloud Fruit. I am simply testing my luck so I don't think that they're here for the Mysterious Cloud Fruit. If my guess is right, they have another motive! I've been in the snowfields all this time so I'm not too sure of the happenings in the world outside."



## Chapter 774: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit (5)

---

Gu Ruoyun fell silent. When she had stepped into the snowfield, she had sensed a faintly discernible aura. Could it that these people have all came to the snowfields for this very object?

"Can you sense that?"

The man's eyes froze and his handsome face had a never-before-seen sense of seriousness. He raised his head to look at the sky at the deep end of the forest. A light flashed in his eyes.

"It seems to be coming from over there! If I'm correct, the thing which had attracted them here is over there. Furthermore, that object seems like it's a... Spiritual beast egg?"

Gu Ruoyun was slightly surprised. She stared in astonishment at the man in red's handsome visage.

Actually, from the beginning, she had already sensed the spiritual beast egg. However, she was only been able to sense it because of her contract with Zixie but this man was able to discern a spiritual beast and spiritual beast egg through a human's senses?

It seems that Xiao Zixie was right.

This man was the second most powerful person she had encountered since the beginning!

The most powerful person she had encountered was that man in white who calls himself the 'Holy One'!

A cold light filled with murderous intent flashed across Gu Ruoyun's eyes at the thought of that man. He was the one to blame for causing Zixie to transform into a phoenix egg.

One day, I will make him pay this debt in full!

"Hong Lian, what are you doing here?"

Suddenly, a less than friendly voice called out.

Gu Ruoyun turned around and found a small and thin old man leading a group of people towards the ground. The old man's face was as wrinkled as an old tree's bark. His tiny eyes were narrowed into small slits. They darted back and forth ceaselessly but no one could tell what he was plotting.

The man in red raised an eyebrow and replied mockingly, "Why would I need anyone's permission to come here?"

"Hehe," The thin little man laughed. Suddenly, he noticed Gu Ruoyun who was standing next to the man and a light flashed in his eyes. He then asked with a smile, "Everyone in the world always talk of your deep devotion to your Madam, you've been searching for her whereabouts for twenty years without stop. Yet, I never thought that the deeply devoted Grand Lord Hong Lian would do something like this. I wonder, is this young lady your officially wedded wife or your little concubine?"

Boom!

No one expected the man in red who had been standing still to suddenly make his move!

A loud noise exploded in front of the old man. If he had not managed to quickly evade it, he would have lost his life in that one blow. Even if he did survive the blow, he would have at least lost half a life! Even so, he had been affected by the attack and was rendered battered and exhausted.

"Madman! You are just like the world says — a madman!" The old man gritted his teeth hatefully. If his powers had not been one level short of the man in red's, he would definitely have not allowed him to get away with this!

I had only said a few words but this madman had attacked me without any warning! F\*ck, does he have the audacity to be even more insane?

" So what if I'm insane? If I can make you all fear me, then there's

nothing wrong with being a little mad." The man in red smiled icily and swept his gaze across the battered old man. He then continued sharply, "Yu Xinglong, if I hear you insulting my daughter again, you won't be so lucky the next time!"

The man, whose name was Yu Xinglong, now had a very ugly look on his face. However, he mostly felt a lingering fear.

How was I supposed to know that this person would attack me without any warning, I wasn't even ready! In the past, even if Grand Lord Hong Lian had wanted to pick a fight with me, he would have at least warned me about it. Otherwise, I would not have ended up cutting such a sorry figure!

# Chapter 775: Supreme Jin (1)

---

The altercation had attracted the attention of quite a number of people. When they heard how the Grand Lord Hong Lian had addressed Gu Ruoyun, they could not help but stare at her. Their hearts were curious as to where this daughter of the Grand Lord had come from.

After all these years, they had never heard him mention that he had a daughter!

Also, no one actually knows the Grand Lord Hong Lian's real name nor did they know where he had come from. All they know was that this man had appeared out of thin air over ten years ago and in a few short months, he had committed acts which had stunned countless people. It was because of this that the Grand Lord Hong Lian's name soon resonated through the entire mainland.

During her past life, Gu Ruoyun had once heard of Grand Lord Hong Lian and he was already at a rank that she yearned to be at that time. Now that she has met him, she realized that this man was enigmatic and unpredictable.

His entire being was a mystery which no one could solve.

"Hmph!"

Yu Xinglong fiercely straightened his robes and swept his venomous gaze towards the man in red. He was filled with an absolutely malicious aura but he said nothing else and turned around, heading towards the opposite direction.

The man in red smiled icily and soon retracted his gaze. He turned towards Gu Ruoyun and his handsome face lit up with a warm smile.

"Little girl, you don't need to bother about that old fart's words. One day, I will kill him!"

Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders. She never had any intention of taking Yu Xinglong's words to heart. She had only just turned around when a familiar-looking figure suddenly appeared before her eyes, causing her expression to freeze in place.

The man's golden robes fluttered under the gentle breeze.

He seemed to notice her eyes on him and he turned to look at Gu Ruoyun. His gorgeous golden eyes flashed with uncertainty but that expression left as quickly as it came.

If the man in red next to Gu Ruoyun was a domineering and aggressive overlord, this man would be a great, grave and stern sovereign. His entire body was decked in a dazzling shade of gold and his gilded robes looked utterly resplendent under the sun.

"Little girl, are you acquainted with him?"

The man in red noticed where Gu Ruoyun was looking and he frowned as he asked.

Acquainted?

Weren't we more than acquaintances?

In my past life, our friendship went deeper than that! Unfortunately, he can't possibly recognize me now.

Gu Ruoyun smiled at the thought and replied, "He's Supreme Jin, someone who had earned the title of Martial Supreme at a young age. Who wouldn't know who he is? However, I'm not all that close to him."

"Really?"

The man in red raised an eyebrow. He did not know why but he felt that there was something in the way Gu Ruoyun had looked at Supreme Jin. Nevertheless, everyone has their own secrets so he made no attempt to get to the heart of the matter.

"Little girl, let's go. I'd like to see the thing hidden in this snow forest which had attracted the attention of so many powerful

cultivators." He stared into the far-off sky, his thoughts a mystery from others.

Gu Ruoyun nodded. As she followed the man into the snow forest, she turned around to take one last look at Supreme Jin.

So what if I told him about my identity in my past life? Would this man even believe me? Perhaps he would think that I was insane.

Forget it. Right now, the most important thing in this forest is that spiritual beast egg. Now is not the time to get reacquainted with Supreme Jin...

Gu Ruoyun turned away at the thought of this and no longer spared him another look.

## Chapter 776: Supreme Jin (2)

---

"An Lin."

Supreme Jin stared at the direction where Gu Ruoyun had left as he tightly knit his attractive brows and spoke coldly.

Hearing this, a bodyguard dressed in black behind him joined his fist and bowed respectfully, "What are your orders, Your Majesty?"

"When we leave this place, investigate that woman's identity."

"Your wish is my command!"

An Lin responded with reverence. After issuing the order, Supreme Jin said nothing more and watched Gu Ruoyun who was following closely behind the Grand Lord Hong Lian. His brow furrowed even more.

I'm not sure if I had been mistaken but I feel as if that woman's eyes are extremely familiar. However, I'm very certain that I've never met this woman!

Suddenly, Supreme Jin seemed to remember something and asked coldly, "Have you managed to find out the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian's whereabouts?"

"Reporting to you, Your Majesty."

The bodyguard named An Lin joined his fists and bowed, "It seems that the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian had recently vanished. This subordinate has sent many others to investigate but we were unable to find any more information about him."

Boom!

A powerful force exploded from the man's body, striking An Lin's chest angrily. At that instant, An Lin's body was sent flying before he landed heavily on the ground. A dribble of fresh blood trickled down from the corner of his lips.

At this moment, many have already left for the deeper end of the

snowy forest. On this empty space at the entrance of the forest, only the man in golden robes and his subordinates had remained.

Rustle, rustle!

Instantly, every guard knelt down before him. They lowered their heads and did not dare to even look at Supreme Jin.

"It has been so many days and you're still unable to find the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian's whereabouts?" Supreme Jin slowly raised his head. His cold, sharp gaze was like ice, lowering the temperature in the already freezing snowy forest. Even the air seemed to freeze immediately as he said, "You can't even find one person so what's the use for me to nurture you! All of you, get out of this Supreme One's sight!"

"Your Majesty," An Lin crawled up from the ground and hurriedly knelt before Supreme Jin, "The snowy forest is particularly dangerous at this time, please allow this subordinate to stay and protect you."

As he spoke, a pair of aggressive eyes fell upon An Lin.

An Lin's body broke into cold sweat. He gritted his teeth and did not dare to even raise his head.

"This Supreme One can handle this place on my own. You go and find Bai Zhongtian's whereabouts! When you have news of him, report to me again. Scram!"

Boom!

Following that, the aura in Supreme Jin's body burst towards the guards. In that instant, everyone was pushed over by that monstrous wave and their bodies were thrown a few meters away. He then turned around and walked into the snowy forest, refusing to grant them with any more chances.

"Yun'er, don't you worry. I will find the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian, kill him, and avenge you!"



The man gently lowered his eyes as his beautifully handsome features filled with an icy chill. The murderous intent from his being erupted into all four corners around him, making him look like a keen and deadly sword.

Gu Ruoyun, however, had only just arrived on the East Peak Mainland and was unaware of everything which was happening on the mainland. She was also unaware that Supreme Jin has considered her Master, the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian, his mortal enemy as he was under the impression that Bai Zhongtian had murdered her. Otherwise, she would have told him the truth of her identity even if Supreme Jin refused to believe her.

...

"Hehe, Grand Lord Hong Lian, allow me to give you a piece of advice on account of our many years of camaraderie. You better send your daughter away. Otherwise, with the many great dangers which lie in this snowy forest, I reckon that she won't stay alive for very much longer."

Inside the snowy forest, Yu Xinglong glanced at Gu Ruoyun and turned his gaze towards the man in red as he spoke scornfully.

## Chapter 777: Supreme Jin (3)

---

The man in red laughed coldly, "I'd advise you to consider your own safety a little better, lest you end up dying in the claws of these spiritual beasts if I don't kill you myself. As for my daughter, you need not trouble yourself. Was your last loss not enough for you? Would you like to have another go?"

Yu Xinglong's expression changed. He scoffed, turned around, and no longer looked at the man in red.

"Hehe. My Lady, you're probably not aware of the matters concerning this Yu Xinglong, right?"

Suddenly, a voice spoke up from the side, interrupting Gu Ruoyun's thoughts.

Gu Ruoyun jumped and turned around. Her astonished gaze landed on the man standing next to her.

If I remember correctly, Godfather had addressed him as Xue Kuang yesterday.

"Before the Grand Lord had reached the rank of a Martial Supreme, Yu Xinglong had his eye on the Grand Lord's talents and wanted him to become his son-in-law. Unfortunately, the Grand Lord was deeply devoted to the Madam so how could he possibly accept another woman? He had rejected his offer. Yu Xinglong's daughter found it unacceptable so she then tried to intertwine herself with the Grand Lord. In the end, the Grand Lord taught her a good lesson! Yu Xinglong felt humiliated and declared that he would force the Grand Lord to become his son-in-law! However, no one expected the Grand Lord to grow in power in such a short time until he was nearly at the same level as him. Because of this, Yu Xinglong did not dare show his impudence and could only shoot arrows at the Grand Lord in secret. Now, the Grand Lord has flung him to the back. If the Grand Lord had not been so busy with fighting against the people of that particular organization, Yu

Xinglong would not be alive today."

Xue Kuang excitedly described the man in red's heroic deed to Gu Ruoyun. To them, the Grand Lord is a god in their hearts. No one could surpass him.

If it had not been for that organization which was eyeing the Grand Lord covetously, would Yu Xinglong still be alive to stand here and mock the Grand Lord?

Even though Yu Xinglong's powers were quite formidable and the Grand Lord's powers have long surpassed his, if the Grand Lord was to publicly start a fight with Yu Xinglong, that organization would definitely step in to meddle or collect influence and power from the collateral damage between the two sides.

So, the Grand Lord has decided to let Yu Xinglong be for the time being. However, if he crosses the line and makes the Grand Lord lose his patience entirely, only then would he risk the dangerous meddling from that organization.

Gu Ruoyun listened quietly to Xue Kuang's story and understood the dispute between Yu Xinglong and Grand Lord Hong Lian.

So, it was actually due to an affair of the heart but it was obvious that Yu Xinglong had underestimated the Grand Lord's talents and capabilities.

"Ah, that organization you've mentioned, what's it called?"

Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow and asked Xue Kuang.

"Xue Kuang!"

Bai Yin, who was next to them, stopped Xue Kuang when she saw that he was about to continue his conversation with Gu Ruoyun. She then explained, "There's no need to inform her Ladyship about these matters, is there?"

Bai Yin did not spit the words 'her Ladyship' willingly. After all, deep down, she does not acknowledge Gu Ruoyun's current status.

However, at a time like this, she was not willing to oppose Gu Ruoyun. Otherwise, based on how much the Grand Lord now favors her, she might end up being chased out of the Territory because of this woman.

Hearing Bai Yin's words, Xue Kuang realized that he had accidentally said too much and laughed in embarrassment. He rubbed his nose awkwardly, momentarily unsure of what to say.

The man in red rolled his eyes and turned towards Gu Ruoyun. His gaze softened, no longer holding the icy domineering gaze that he used whenever he looked at anyone else.

## Chapter 778: Supreme Jin (4)

---

"Do you recall what I had said to you before? I have a powerful enemy and that is the organization Xue Kuang was talking about! However, I can't reveal their name to you for the time being. I don't want you to get mixed up in this matter. Once I have enough power to completely destroy them, I'll tell you everything."

Gu Ruoyun smiled. She knew that her godfather would not tell her the name of the organization for her sake. After all, an enemy who was deemed powerful by the Grand Lord Hong Lian must be extremely powerful!

With my current level of power, how could I go up against that organization?

"Godfather, your enemy is my enemy. Perhaps my powers are not strong enough now but one day, I will be able to help you in your revenge." Gu Ruoyun lifted her head and looked up at the man in red's handsome visage. Her clear, cold eyes were resolute.

The man in red burst into laughter, "You are indeed my good little daughter! Alright! Then I'll wait until you have the power to help me take my vengeance! If my wife knows what a good daughter I've taken in, she would be delighted."

It's just that I don't even know where Yu'er is!

As soon as he thought of Dongfang Yu again, the man in red smiled bitterly. His handsome face was immediately filled with sorrow.

It has been twenty years.

For over twenty years, not a day has gone by when I don't miss her. Nevertheless, during these twenty years, I've combed the entire mainland and even searched through countless forbidden places. Still, I have not found her!

Could it be that she's no longer in this world?

The man in red felt a pang of agony in his heart. He quickly shook his head.

No!

This is definitely not possible!

Yu'er must still be alive!

If I can't find her in one day, I will spend ten years looking for her! If I can't find her in ten years, I will spend a hundred! If I'm still unable to find her in a hundred years, I will spend my every reincarnation until I find her again!

The man in red unknowingly began to display an unwavering determination on his face. His domineering eyes were filled with purpose.

Bai Yin's face turned into an ugly shade. I had just stopped Xue Kuang from saying more about the matter to Gu Ruoyun yet the Grand Lord revealed it himself. He's clearly doing this on purpose to slap me in the face!

I've kept him company for twenty years and given up an infinite amount of time. Why am I no better than a little girl whom he had just met?

I won't accept this!

One day, I will publicly become the Grand Lord's wife and that little slut, Gu Ruoyun, will no longer dare to act so shamelessly in front of me! She would even be required to bow and greet me for I will then be her godmother.

Bai Yin calmed the rage in her heart and slowly followed behind the group.

"Hehe."

Yu Xinglong sneered. His eyes were filled with ridicule as they swept across Gu Ruoyun's figure.

This little girl shows no sign of spiritual fluctuations within her

body, she's an absolute good-for-nothing! A good-for-nothing like this would think that she has the ability to help Hong Lian in his vengeance? Also, Hong Lian has even accepted her words? When did Hong Lian become such an idiot? He's even taken in a good-for-nothing like her as his goddaughter!

She is his goddaughter only in name but what person would be blind to the dirty thoughts in this fellow's heart?

Initially, I had thought that Hong Lian was truly that devoted and this was why he had ignored my outstanding daughter. Who would have thought that he would find a good-for-nothing like this! Tsk, tsk. It seems that the Grand Lord Hong Lian had only been putting on an act. You can't judge a person by their appearance.

"Scum!"

The more Yu Xinglong thought of this, the angrier he felt. What was wrong with my daughter to have caused him to humiliate her in front of so many people in the past?

He lost his cool and gritted his teeth as he spat angrily.

## Chapter 779: Supreme Jin (5)

---

The man in red was deep in thought. His prideful eyes paid no attention to Yu Xinglong and this made him so angry that he nearly cursed out loud. He shot a fierce glare at the man and his eyes were filled with malice.

Roar!

Suddenly, a ferocious roar rang out within the snowy forest and sent tremors through the ground. The loud roar caused the white snow covering the forest to fall.

"This roar must be from the Scarlet Electric Beast! Also, there's seems to be more than one of them!"

The man in red pulled Gu Ruoyun behind him as he stared at a thicket close by and ordered darkly, "Get ready!"

"Yes, Grand Lord!"

Instantly, everyone from the Red Lotus Territory drew their weapons and waited in silence as the spiritual beasts charged towards them.

As the spiritual beasts approached, the trees were completely destroyed. Trunks and branches fell to the ground and blocked the road ahead.

"Hehe," Yu Xinglong sneered and his face was filled with a mocking smile, "Grand Lord Hong Lian, these spiritual beasts are all at the rank of a high-level Martial Honor. Are you certain that you can protect the little girl? You'll have to stand next to her and not move. Even so, I'm afraid that the members of the Red Lotus Territory won't be spared, don't expect anyone to help you."

What he means was that if the man in red wishes to protect Gu Ruoyun, there was only one way — he would have to stand next to her and not move. However, if this was the case, he could only let the remaining members of the Red Lotus Territory fight for him.



One should know that these spiritual beasts were all high-level Martial Honors, how could the members of the Red Lotus Territory even stand a chance?

Still, there was one crucial point which Yu Xinglong had overlooked!

That was Gu Ruoyun herself!

"Godfather, there's no need for you to protect me." Gu Ruoyun shook her head as she stated calmly, "You'd better go on and help the other members of the Red Lotus Territory. Leaving me along would not be much of a hindrance."

The man in red frowned and asked, "Will you be alright?"

Even though Gu Ruoyun had once taken care of a sneak attack from a Snow Spirit Wolf, the Scarlet Electric Beast was a high-level Martial Honor and there was more than one of them! Regardless of how powerful Gu Ruoyun might be, she was only a mid-level Martial Honor.

The man in red raised his hand and pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms as he said, "Little girl, come fight with me. I won't feel safe leaving you here, it's safer if you stick with me."

Gu Ruoyun's heart softened as she felt the man's care and concern for her. She smiled, "Godfather, trust me. I'll be fine."

After she spoke, she paused and a glint flashed in her eyes.

"Lingxiao, Yan, come out and fight!"

Whoosh!

Once she had spoken, two rays of light instantly shot out from Gu Ruoyun's chest and landed on the ground. The two rays of light then disappeared, revealing two men who stepped into view.

One of them was dressed in white robes. His hair was long and his beard was white. From afar, he clearly looked like an elderly man. However, upon closer look, one could see that the beard

actually conceals an extremely handsome face. He gently raised his snow-white brows before turning towards the charging spiritual beasts.

The other man was a distinctively splendid sight to behold. He was undoubtedly a beauty who could cause the downfall of a nation. Especially since none of them had ever seen someone with one red and one emerald eye. It was strange yet altogether alluring.

The man in red was shocked at the sight of those two men. He looked at Gu Ruoyun in confusion as he asked, "Little girl, these two are..."

# Chapter 780: The Semi-Saint Dragon (1)

---

Gu Ruoyun did not reply to his question. Her green robes fluttered under the light breeze. Her eyes were calm and quiet as she fixed her gaze upon the charging spiritual beasts.

"Lingxiao, Yan. You haven't moved your limbs in a while either. Let's go."

Whoosh!

In that instant, the two spiritual beasts turned into rays of light and attacked the Scarlet Electric Beasts.

While Lingxiao was not the strongest amongst the Four Divine Beasts, the formation had not weakened his powers too drastically. Therefore, when he had left the formation, he was already a mid-level Martial Honor. Not too long ago, he had broken through to the rank of a high-level Martial Honor.

As for Yan, what more was there to say? He had long entered that rank. Coupled with the power he holds in his hand, a few Scarlet Electric Beasts would be no match for him.

Yu Xinglong's expression was a particularly ugly shade. He glared coldly at the man in red and said icily, "I never thought that you would be so generous, Grand Lord Hong Lian, to casually give away two high-level Martial Honor spiritual beasts to a daughter whom you had picked up from god-knows-where."

Those were two high-level Martial Honor spiritual beasts. Spiritual beasts like these have particularly stubborn temperaments and are especially difficult to tame. He did not think that Hong Lian would have indulged his goddaughter so much to gift her such powerful spiritual beasts as protectors.

"I did not give these spiritual beasts to her."

The man in red wrinkled his brows, even he was shocked by Gu Ruoyun's display of power. No wonder she had the courage to

storm into the snowfields, not only is she exceedingly talented, she also has two high-level Martial Honor spiritual beasts in her possession.

"Hehe."

Yu Xinglong sneered and his lips curled into a despicable angle, "I say, Grand Lord Hong Lian, won't you stop this charade? If these two spiritual beasts had not come from you, how could this little girl have possibly picked them up? Don't tell me that this little girl has some powerful force behind her. No matter how powerful that force is, they can't possibly surpass you. Otherwise, why would she be fawning over you? Besides, what kind of family could tolerate a completely talentless person without even a sliver of spiritual energy? The people in this world are realistic, aren't you just helping her because her youth and beauty have caught your eye? She's merely a good-for-nothing so there's no need for you to masquerade her as a genius. Why would you even go to such lengths?"

Boom!

A wave of fiery anger erupted from the man in red. His eyes were like the sharp end of a blade as his gaze cut towards Yu Xinglong. When he sensed that sharp glare, Yu Xinglong could not help but tremble. Still, he quibbled on, "Was I mistaken? What's wrong with my daughter? She's young as well though her looks are only just acceptable. If you become my son-in-law, the two of us combined would definitely be more powerful than this one woman!"

"Your daughter?" The man in red laughed icily, "In my heart, your daughter will never even come close to my wife! She does not even have an iota of a chance. Gu Ruoyun is my daughter and her spiritual beasts were not gifts from me. Believe it or not, that's up to you!"

"Hong Lian, I'm telling you, you must marry my daughter!

Otherwise, I will make you my mortal enemy!"

Honestly, although Yu Xinglong still harbored hatred towards the Grand Lord Hong Lian, if the Grand Lord Hong Lian was willing to become his son-in-law, he would erase all that hatred with one stroke! After all, Hong Lian's talents were clear for all to see. Very few people could match up to him on this mainland.

"Hahaha!"

The man in red burst into domineering laughter which pierced through the clouds.

"Mortal enemies? As you wish! Yu Xinglong, from now on, I, the Grand Lord Hong Lian, shall be your mortal enemy!"

## Chapter 781: The Semi-Saint Dragon (2)

---

"You..." Yu Xinglong's face turned ashen with rage. He simply could not understand what was going on in the Grand Lord Hong Lian's mind. Had he actually agreed to become mortal enemies with him for the sake of those two women? Was he even aware of what's actually beneficial to him?

Out of those two women, the whereabouts of one of them was unknown while the other was a good-for-nothing. How could they be worth all this trouble?

However, this was clearly not the time for squabbling as the Scarlet Electric Beasts were now right in front of them. Even with Ling Xiao and Yan blocking the way, there were too many of them and they could not contain all the Scarlet Electric Beasts.

Yu Xinglong scoffed icily and joined the battle. Because Lingxiao and Yan were at the front, the man in red did not join in the fight. Instead, he remained by Gu Ruoyun's side, protecting her.

A thick smoke began to build up in the snowy forest.

Fresh blood dyed the pure-white snow in a stark red hue and the ground was soon littered with the bodies of countless spiritual beasts. However, the remaining spiritual beasts did not relent and continued to charge and attack madly. It was almost as if they did not fear the deaths of their companions.

"Something isn't right!" The man in red wrinkled his brows as he stared up at the white, foggy sky. His cold eyes darkened, "Something isn't right with these Scarlet Electric Beasts, it's almost as if someone was controlling them from behind their backs."

Gu Ruoyun trembled but she did not respond. Instead, she furrowed her brows in silence.

"This fellow is right."

Just then, Xiao Zixie's childish voice called out from within her

soul, "These Scarlet Electric Beasts are definitely under someone's control. They don't feel pain at all nor do they feel any fear. They will never stop attacking."

"Everyone, come have a look!"

Just then, a voice filled with surprised rang out from the side.

A poorly-dressed youth was pointing at a dense mass of trees up ahead as he said, "I think there's something there, perhaps it's the spiritual beast egg?"

Everyone's hearts trembled as they heard this.

If a human wishes to possess a powerful spiritual beast, what were the ways for them to do that? On this mainland, it was easy to defeat a spiritual beast but it was quite impossible to make one yield to a human! Spiritual beasts who have unlocked their spiritual intelligence were very intelligent and they would rather die than serve a human!

Hence, many cultivators wish to obtain a spiritual beast egg. The only way to make a spiritual beast listen to one's orders was by nurturing it from a young age! Hence, once they heard the news of this spiritual beast egg, countless powerful cultivators had immediately rushed to find it.

Also, if this spiritual beast egg could be found in the deepest part of the snowfield without it being consumed by other spiritual beasts, one could imagine how powerful it could be. Like suppressed blood vessels, the other spiritual beasts would not dare to touch this spiritual beast egg!

As for the maddened herd of spiritual beasts which had attacked the humans, this spiritual beast egg was probably behind all of this! A powerful spiritual beast, even before its birth, could order other spiritual beasts into doing its bidding.

The crowd was in awe at the thought of this. No matter what, they were all determined to obtain that spiritual beast egg.

After an extended period of time, the Scarlet Electric Beasts have all been finally slaughtered. Everyone heaved a sigh of relief but before they could react, the youth who had cried out immediately ran quickly into the dense patch of forest. He laughed as he ran, "Haha, the spiritual beast egg is mine now, it finally belongs to me!"

Roar!

Just as the youth was running towards it, a powerful flame shot out from the forest, reducing him to ashes before he even had the chance to react.



## Chapter 782: The Semi-Saint Dragon (3)

---

Everyone was shocked as they hurriedly looked at the direction where the youth had vanished. A layer of cold sweat rolled down their backs and they all felt a great chill.

That youthful-looking person could not be judged simply by his appearance alone. In fact, he had long passed a hundred years of age. The only thing was that no one really knew what methods he had used to maintain his youthful looks. Furthermore, his powers were not exactly weak! He was a low-level Martial Supreme.

To be able to destroy a low-level Martial Supreme with just one breath, what kind of cultivators live in these parts?

Just as the crowd was hesitating, a living creature poked its head through the thicket.

"A dragon, heavens, it's a dragon!"

"Dragons are at the very top of the food chain and every dragon is born as a Martial Emperor at the very least. Highly talented dragon babies can even be born as Martial Honors! Furthermore, dragons have long lives so regardless of how we compare it, us humans could never surpass a dragon's power."

Gu Ruoyun gently raised an eyebrow. The most talented dragons are born as Martial Honors? Zixie was a Martial Supreme from the moment he had hatched. In that sense, Zixie's power is a few levels above that of dragons.

Roar!

The dragon roared loudly and destroyed the trees around it with one wave of its tail. Its menacing and sharp eyes were filled with disdain as it swept them across the tiny humans before it.

However...

That last roar caused everyone to feel sluggish, many nearly lost

control and spat out a mouthful of blood.

To be able to achieve such power, could it be that this dragon...

"A Martial Saint, it must be at the rank of a Martial Saint! What on earth does the existence of that spiritual beast egg even mean? How could it receive protection from a Martial Saint dragon?"

"Regardless! We must get this spiritual beast egg!"

The man in red fell silent as he heard the crowd's words. After a long pause, he slowly spoke, "This dragon is not yet a Martial Saint. It's between a high-level Martial Honor and a Martial Saint, also known as a Semi-Saint!"

However, even if the opposition was only a Semi-Saint, its powers should not be underestimated.

"That's right," Supreme Jin glanced at the man in red before he turned towards the dragon. His face was grim and his beautiful eyes flashed darkly, "It is indeed a Semi-Saint! If we wish to defeat it, we cannot fight amongst ourselves. We must forces and attack in unison. As for the possession of the spiritual beast egg, let's wait until we've defeated the dragon before discussing it!"

The crowd looked at one another. After all, they were all enemies despite being here together and there was only one spiritual beast egg! If they joined forces and defeated the enemy together, what if someone purposely holds back and wait for everyone to be wounded to claim the spiritual beast egg for themselves?

Supreme Jin clearly saw right through the hearts of the crowd as he swept his cold and sharp eyes across their hesitant faces.

"If we don't defeat it, forget about the spiritual beast egg, we might not even come out of here alive."

That's right!

If that dragon doesn't die, we'll never be able to leave this place!

Everyone's hearts began to fill with determination at the

thought.

We can decide who gets to possess the spiritual beast egg after. The most important thing now is to defeat this dragon!

"Alright!" Yu Xinglong gritted his teeth fiercely and said, "Since that's the case, let's defeat this dragon first. What do you all think?"

Everyone nodded. If we don't defeat this dragon, we'll never stand a chance to obtain the spiritual beast egg that it's guarding.

Roar!

The dragon let out a loud roar again. Its roar formed circles of light waves towards the crowd. At that moment, even the ground was destroyed by the dragon's roar which seems powerful enough to destroy everything in sight.

## Chapter 783: The Semi-Saint Dragon (4)

---

Instantly, a few Martial Emperors who were adept at defense joined forces to raise their defenses, deflecting the light waves away from the crowd. Yu Xinglong hurriedly turned back and barked at the man in red, "You're the most powerful person here, the main attack will be left to you."

The man in red smiled and lowered his eyes to look at Gu Ruoyun, "Do you want this spiritual beast egg?"

Gu Ruoyun blinked and asked, "What do you mean?"

"If you want it, godfather will get it for you. If you don't want it, we can leave now."

"Hong Lian!" Yu Xinglong nearly spat out a mouthful of blood in anger. He had not expected this fellow to indulge that woman to such a degree.

If she wanted it, he would take it for her.

If she doesn't want it, he would abandon us and leave?

The most powerful amongst us here is the Grand Lord Hong Lian. If he were to leave, there's no way we could resist this dragon even if we had all joined forces.

Bai Yin's expression turned extremely ugly and she could not help but speak up, "Grand Lord, if you can get that spiritual beast egg, our chances at revenge will increase."

Whoosh!

A pair of sharp eyes swept towards Bai Yin. The man in red's eyes were filled with an icy chill, causing Bai Yin to bite her lower lip as her body trembled violently.

This time, the man in red didn't say much. When he looked back at Gu Ruoyun, his handsome visage lit up with a heart-stopping smile.

The rest of the Red Lotus Territory disciples could understand what has gotten into Bai Yin over the past two days. After all, in the past, she has never overstepped her position in this manner. However, ever since Gu Ruoyun's appearance, she has already committed a few conspicuous mistakes. It was also very obvious that the Grand Lord was becoming increasingly dissatisfied with her conduct. It was likely that after this, she would never have the chance to stay by the Grand Lord's side again.

"Hong Lian, hurry up and give us a hand!"

Yu Xinlong was barely able to block the dragon's second attack. His elderly face displayed a great sense of urgency as he bellowed loudly at the motionless man in red.

The man in red did not bother to look at him, as if he had not even heard his words.

"Godfather, if you want to find the Mysterious Cloud Fruit, we should go through here, right?" Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders and asked in exasperation.

The man in red fell silent as he heard this. He then nodded, "You're right. Since that's the case, this spiritual beast egg shall be a secondary spoil of the war and a gift to you. If you don't like it, use it as a tonic for yourself."

Did he just suggest to use a spiritual beast egg which could control a Semi-Saint Martial Honor dragon as a tonic? Perhaps only a madman would utter such words! Besides, to him, it would seem that a powerful spiritual beast egg was not as important as the Mysterious Cloud Fruit. Was there something wrong with his brain?

Nevertheless, at least the man in red was finally willing to act. Yu Xinglong didn't say much and concentrated on deflecting the dragon's attacks.

The man in red rose high into the sky and his Red Lotus Spear

appeared in his hands out of thin air. At this moment, his red robes fluttered wildly in mid-air like a red lotus blossom, proud and domineering. His entire being erupted with a sharp, sword-like, aggressive aura.

"This man is indeed very powerful."

When the man in red made his move, Gu Ruoyun could sense the destructive power from within his being. She fell silent, "While he is only a high-level Martial Supreme at this moment, he's not too far away from becoming a Martial Saint! I'm definitely anticipating the day when he breaks through to the rank of Martial Saint."

In her past and present life, there were not many people whom Gu Ruoyun had admired. The Grand Lord Hong Lian can be counted as one of them. However, her great admiration was not because of Hong Lian's talent and power but because of his attitude!

# Chapter 784: The Semi-Saint Dragon (5)

---

A madman!

This man is indeed as mad they say!

He would chop off the arm of a powerful foe even if it meant death! It's also because of his suicidal military strategy that he has become so renowned! You could say that the Grand Lord Hong Lian has stepped out from the mark of blood!

The fight in mid-air grew more intense. Gu Ruoyun gently raised her head. The fight between the man and the dragon was reflected clearly in her clear, cold gaze.

Everyone else was clearly battered and exhausted. Only the man in red robes continued to move with elegance and grace. His hand held the Red Lotus Spear and his eyes were incredibly pronounced. When faced with such a powerful dragon, he showed no signs of weakness. His handsome face remained calm and collected.

As the two remained embroiled in battle, the fallen trees around them turned into smoke and a raging flame ignited in the forest.

Before everyone's eyes, a spiritual egg became visible on an altar behind the dragon.

Because the distance was far too great, Gu Ruoyun could not make out the purple markings on the spiritual beast egg. However, based on its texture, she had a feeling that it was a phoenix egg. Could this really be a phoenix egg as well?

Suddenly, a ray of light appeared in the spiritual beast egg. Xiao Zixie, who had been in the Ancient Divine Pagoda, could no longer contain himself. He rushed straight out and charged swiftly towards the spiritual beast egg, taking advantage of everyone's distraction as they looked at the fight between the man and the dragon.

The dragon was thoroughly angered when it saw that someone

had dared to steal the egg in front of it. This act cannot go unpunished!

However, just as it was about to turn angrily towards Zixie's tiny body which was rapidly approaching it... It seemed to become stunned. A wave of astonishment appeared in its eyes and the initial menace in its gaze instantly disappeared.

Gu Ruoyun had initially assumed that Xiao Zixie had taken a liking to the spiritual beast egg and intended to take it for her. However, what she did not expect was for him to open his mouth as soon as he had arrived in front of the egg and to swallow it whole.

That's right!

Xiao Zixie had swallowed the spiritual beast egg. Not even the crowd could react in time for this...

His actions completely stirred the hornet's nest. The cultivators who had initially been engrossed in their battle with the dragon were immediately filled with rage. Their eyes glared murderously at Xiao Zixie.

We're here fighting with our lives but in the end, this kid had taken advantage of the chaos and snatched away the spiritual beast egg!

The man in red glanced at Xiao Zixie and returned to Gu Ruoyun's side in a flash. He then spoke regretfully, "I was thinking of making that Spiritual Beast Egg into a tonic for you but that kid had got to it first."

Gu Ruoyun's mouth twitched. Since when had Xiao Zixie turned into a glutton? He would even consume a spiritual beast egg!

Supreme Jin was speechless as he watched the events unfold before him. He furrowed his brows before quickly relaxing them. After all, the spiritual beast egg was not the true goal of his journey here. He has no qualms if it fell into the hands of another.



He said nothing more at the thought of this. He then straightened his sleeves and left.

Before he left, he instinctively turned to take one more look at Gu Ruoyun who was standing next to the man in red. He then disappeared into the sky without another glance...

Xiao Zixie wiped his mouth and walked to Gu Ruoyun's side. He spared no time for the cultivators to react as he licked his lips and disappeared into thin air.

"Damned girl, speak. Is that kid related to you?"

When he saw that the dragon was no longer attacking them, Yu Xinglong immediately shifted his attention away from it. He glared at Gu Ruoyun furiously and gnashed his teeth as he questioned her.

Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders and looked completely innocent, "I don't know who he is."

## Chapter 785: Give Me An Explanation (1)

---

"You say that you don't know him but if that's the case, why had he walked up to you and disappeared near you? I advice you to hand over the damned brat. Otherwise, you will not be spared!" Yu Xinglong spoke threateningly.

The man in red frowned as he stood protectively in front of Gu Ruoyun, shielding her from Yu Xinglong's venomous gaze as well.

"Which of your eyes had witnessed the kid talking to my daughter?" The man in red smiled coldly, "You had concluded that my daughter knows the kid just because he had walked towards my daughter and disappeared? Did you even see him say a single word to her at all?"

Yu Xinglong was speechless from all the questions. His face turned an ugly shade as if he had just swallowed feces and his face was ashen.

However, the man in red's statement was accurate; Yu Xinglong had only witnessed the child vanishing into thin air, he did not see if the child had demonstrated that he knew Gu Ruoyun at all. Therefore, they could not conclude whether the two were acquainted with each other or not.

"Yu Xinglong, I know that you have something against my daughter but you can't just spout venomous slander and have delusions of shifting the blame! As her godfather, I, the Grand Lord Hong Lian, must demand justice for my innocent daughter on account of everything which has happened today. If you don't give me an explanation, I won't take this lying down!"

The words 'won't take this lying down' echoed through the forest. It resounded through the area and caused Yu Xinglong to look even more unhappy.

"Just a moment ago, this woman had summoned two spiritual

beasts in front of everyone's eyes. I suspect that she must have some sort of magical tool of space-manipulation to house those spiritual beasts so it's not too unreasonable to think that child who had just disappeared would be related to her."

Humans cannot reside in a magical tool of space-manipulation but spiritual beasts can. However, a multidimensional divine weapon like Xiao Hei can house both human and spiritual beasts but such multidimensional divine weapons were considered as myths on this mainland. No one had ever seen one before.

The man in red smiled.

His smile was absolutely magnificent yet also domineering and keen.

"Yu Xinglong, everyone knows that spiritual beasts with more powerful talents can take human form once they reach a certain stage. However, there's never been a spiritual beast who could take a human form during their childhood stage. Not even the powerful dragons have this ability, they only have the ability to transform when they reach adulthood! If a spiritual beast like that exists in the world, then it must carry the peak of existence on the mainland! Hence, do you really think that a child could be a spiritual beast?"

Yu Xinglong was so humiliated that he dearly wished to find a hole to bury himself in. After all, when all has been said and done, he also felt that it was impossible for a spiritual beast to transform into a human before reaching adulthood. Only the Ancient Divine Spiritual Beasts have this ability but the Ancient Divine Spiritual Beasts were the myth of myths. How could a good-for-nothing possibly control such a powerful existence?

"This..." Yu Xinglong took a deep breath and admitted unwillingly, "Perhaps I was wrong."

"Wrong?" The man in red laughed frostily, "You had framed my daughter. How could the mere confession of a mistake be enough

to even the score? I won't let this matter slide so easily if you do not give me an explanation!"

Yu Xinglong fiercely gritted his teeth, "Grand Lord Hong Lian, don't you start reaching out for a yard after taking an inch. What exactly do you want?"

"Kneel and apologize to my daughter."

The man clasped his hands behind him as his red robes fluttered gently. His steel-cut eye shot towards Yu Xinglong like blades. His tone of voice left no room for negotiations.

"You..." Yu Xinglong's entire body trembled, "A scholar prefers death to humiliation. Grand Master Hong Lian, you should not cross the line!"

## Chapter 786: Give Me An Explanation (2)

---

Boom!

The man in red threw his sleeves back and a crimson light with a devastating force burst upwards. Yu Xinglong's expression changed greatly and he quickly straightened his sleeves to block the attack. Despite his efforts, a small sliver of that power cut through his defenses and hit him squarely in the chest.

A trail of blood slowly trickled down from the corner of his lips. Yu Xinglong's eyes were venomous as they glared dead-on at Grand Master Hong Lian.

"You're really going to make an enemy of me for the sake of a woman?"

"Yu Xinglong, you think too highly of yourself." The man in red coldly replied, "I have long disliked the sight of a scoundrel like you. If it hasn't been for some other matters, do you really think that I would have spared your life to this day after everything you've done to me in the past? Yun'er is my daughter so I will protect her for the rest of my life! If anyone dares to bully her, don't blame me for my lack of courtesy. Now, I'm going to ask you to choose between apologizing or starting a fight!"

Yu Xinglong gritted his teeth and scoffed icily. He then turned away and refused to even look at Gu Ruoyun.

Suddenly, a strong power landed on the back of his knee, causing an instant shockwave of pain in his leg. He ended up kneeling in front of Gu Ruoyun with a thud! This action without any given leave caused Yu Xinglong to go very red in the face. His eyes were spitting with a raging fire.

After all, some of the most virtuous and prestigious cultivators were standing around him. Now, he has been forced to the ground by that b\*stard Hong Lian. It was especially humiliating since he

had been made to kneel before this good-for-nothing woman!

This was the biggest insult to him!

"Hong Lian, I won't let you get away with this!"

"Hahaha!"

The man in red burst into laughter and his lips curled into a smile full of mockery, "You won't let me get away with this? That's good, I'll wait for you to come at me then! Yu Xinglong, I won't kill you now so you should get out of the way. When the time comes for you to die, the Red Lotus Territory's army will trample you to the ground!"

Yu Xinglong staggered to his feet and glared fiercely at the man in red. When his eyes landed on Gu Ruoyun, his pupils became filled with even more venomous hatred. The rest of them then watched as he turned towards the exit of the snowy forest and quickly ran off in an upset manner.

"Godfather," Gu Ruoyun knit her brows sternly as she glanced at the direction of Yu Xinglong's departure and asked, "Is it really okay for you to do this?"

After all, Xue Kuang had previously mentioned that the reason why her godfather had never made a move against Yu Xinglong was because he was worried about the organization which was eyeing him behind his back covetously like a tiger eyeing its prey. Now, for her sake, he had torn his facade off completely. From the way things were unfolding, the two organizations would be like fire and water.

"Don't worry," The man in red raised his lips into a smile as he raised his hand and patted Gu Ruoyun's shoulder, "While things may be a bit complicated, it's not completely impossible to manage. You can rest assured in everything that I do. If I can't even protect my own daughter, what use am I as a father?"

At that point, the man in red's eyes turned pitch black for a

moment and he sighed gently.

In the past, I had not been able to protect my own wife. I also wasn't able to protect my son and daughter on another mainland. Now, I won't let anyone around me suffer from abuse! For this, I would not even fear a blood-stained battlefield!

Gu Ruoyun's heart softened. She smiled and said, "Godfather, if you trust me, wait for me to pay a visit to the Red Lotus Territory. I'll lend a hand to you against that organization."

"Haha," The man in red burst into laughter. His domineering eyes filled with the brim with an indulgent air, "Yun'er, I can take care of this matter so you don't have to worry. Your godfather has yet to find your godmother so I definitely won't gamble on this with my life."

## Chapter 787: Give Me An Explanation (3)

---

Gu Ruoyun said nothing else. She gently stroked her chin and fell silent.

It seems that I will need to speed up on improving my powers.

My powers on the West Spirit Mainland could be considered extremely formidable but this is the East Peak Mainland. Not only am I being watched by that man who calls himself 'this Holy One', I'll have to factor in Godfather's powerful enemy as well...

So, my powers are still not strong enough.

...

It was nightfall and the moonlit sky was silent.

As the spiritual beast egg has been taken away by someone else, the other organizations began to make their way out. Soon, only the Red Lotus Territory members still remained in the snowy forest.

Inside her tent, Gu Ruoyun was staring at Zixie who was standing in front of her. She then asked him a question with a smile that did not reach her eyes, "How is it that I'm unaware that you've become such a glutton?"

Xiao Zixie rolled his eyes and replied, "This spiritual beast egg had originally belonged to me."

"Belonged to you?" Gu Ruoyun felt suspicious, "Could it be that you've had a little phoenix with another female phoenix? Why would you then eat your own child?"

Hearing this, Xiao Zixie's little face flushed red with anger and he pouted with rage, "I had placed the egg there before I had met you. That thing stores my power and it's not just an ordinary spiritual beast egg. I'm only taking back my power. I certainly never had any babies with a female phoenix. However, if you're willing, we



can make a baby."

Gu Ruoyun's face was instantly covered with black lines, "I'm not interested in spiritual beasts. However, you said that that spiritual beast egg stores you power. Why had you done so?"

"This..." Xiao Zixie's eyes darted back and forth before he smiled impishly, "There's no need for you to bother about that. Besides, I've retrieved the power which rightly belongs to me but I'll need some time to fully digest it. Before the time comes, I'll need you to help me."

"What?"

"I need the feather of the Vermillion Bird! Find the Vermillion Bird and get one feather for me. That feather can help me fuse with my power and my power level will then increase! At least, it wouldn't be any worse than your cheap Father."

Gu Ruoyun fell silent before speaking again, "Since that's the case, let's be on our way now."

"You're not going to stay with that cheap Father of yours?"

"There's no need. I'll leave him a letter and we can set off to find the Vermillion Bird. It's also about time for me to exact my revenge on the Xia family! Once this has been done, I'll go to Red Lotus Territory to see my godfather again."

Gu Ruoyun raised her head towards Xiao Zixie as she spoke.

Xiao Zixie nodded, "Alright, let's go right now. Once I've fused with this power, I'll be able to help your cheap Father in his revenge at the very least! Even though I won't be able to reach adulthood just yet."

After the two had finished their discussion, Gu Ruoyun immediately found a brush and paper. She wrote her letter and used the cover of night to her advantage, slipping away in the dark.

When the next day arrived and the members of the Red Lotus

went to summon Gu Ruoyun, all they found was an empty tent and a piece of paper sitting quietly on the floor under a rock. The members of the Red Lotus wasted no time and handed the paper to the man in red.

The man in red took a deep breath and sighed, "Since she has other matters to attend to, leave her be. We'll look for the Mysterious Cloud Fruit first then send someone to find her whereabouts."

As he spoke, the space between his brows showed signs of anxiety. However, when he remembered Gu Ruoyun's display of power, his heart relaxed.

This little girl's powers are formidable and she has many trump cards. I'm certain that she'll blend right into this mainland like a fish in the sea. Perhaps in the not too distant future, I'll be able to hear news of her even if I'm in the Red Lotus Territory...

Perhaps the man in red himself did not know that he had predicted the future in that sense and that day would come so quickly...

## Chapter 788: Give Me An Explanation (4)

---

Qinling.

If one wants to enter the Drifting Wind Country, one would need to cross the ten-thousand-mile mountain range, Qinling.

The spiritual beasts in Qinling were extremely ferocious and no one below the level of a Martial Honor could pass through the mountain range successfully. However, Qinling was full of precious medicinal herbs. Gu Ruoyun had managed to gather many medicinal herbs along her journey.

At this moment, a stalk of little red flowers came into view. Gu Ruoyun's eyes shone, "Are those Fire Feather Herbs? These Fire Feather Herbs are extremely valuable. Perhaps I could use them in future pill refinements."

Gu Ruoyun slowly stepped forward at the thought. However, just as her finger was about to touch the Fire Feather Herb, a blast of air rolled towards her. It crashed in front of her and destroyed the Fire Feather Herbs before she could even pull it out from the roots.

Gu Ruoyun's face turned black instantly. She lifted her head and a familiar figure came into view, causing her expression to tremble. A wave of shock flashed in her eyes.

"Qi Haoran, what do you think you're doing?"

A young woman who was standing nearby looked incensed as she glared furiously at the man in front of her. She bit her lips as she spoke.

The man, who was addressed as Qi Haoran, was dressed in fine robes and laughed mildly in return. His despicable eyes stared at the young woman standing before him as his lips curled into a smile, "Little Princess, come back with me!"

"And if I won't?"

The young woman gritted her teeth, "Qi Haoran, don't even think of threatening me. I won't listen to your orders nor will I marry a scum like you!"

"Hehe," Qi Haoran chuckled icily and he glanced eerily at the young man who was holding the young woman's hand, "You're merely some lower class dog yet you dared fight against me, Qi Haoran, for a woman. Allow me to advise you, you'd better go back, urinate, and reflect on your morality and conduct. Are you even fit for someone of the Little Princess' status? Besides... My grandfather is the Chief Imperial Physician of the Drifting Wind Country. On this mainland, I only recognize the Holy Doctor to be more powerful than my grandfather! I've already asked my grandfather to use his resignation from the post as Chief Imperial Physician to force His Imperial Majesty to marry the Princess to me. Think about it, would His Imperial Majesty be willing to lose my grandfather in order to allow you two to be together?"

He then paused and sneered, "Furthermore, the Crown Prince's body is only now barely holding on by the day. Therefore, His Imperial Majesty definitely can't afford to lose my grandfather now. So, the Little Princess is fated to have no choice but to become my woman!"

The young man's face grew cold. He tightened his grip on the young woman's hand but kept quiet. His eyes were filled with stubbornness and he stared straight at Qi Haoran fearlessly.

"Big Brother Mo, run, now." The young woman gritted her teeth, "Go to the Xia family and ask someone to save me. Only the Xia family can help us now. Regardless of how the Xia family is now, they are still Elder Sister Ruoyun's family. They will help me for Sister Ruoyun's sake. Besides, my relationship with Elder Sister Chuxue has always been pretty good."

"The Xia family?"

Qi Haoran sneered, "The Xia family who had relied on Xia

Ruoyun to rise above the ranks? Isn't the Xia family now relying on Supreme Jin's support? That's how they've managed to reign tyrannical abuse, isn't it? Without Supreme Jin, where would the Xia family even be? Mo Shangfei, you should hate Xia Ruoyun. If it had not been for her provocation towards a powerful cultivator who should not have been provoked in the first place, she would not have caused the annihilation of the entire Mo family, leaving you as a lone remnant! Hahaha!"

Mo Shangfei's expression turned cold but he did not say a single word.

When the Mo family had been annihilated that year, he had not been at the Mo family home. When he returned, everyone in the Mo family had already been killed, only he alone was left to drag out an ignoble purpose! Even Xia Ruoyun and Xia Linyu, the two siblings, were nowhere to be found. If it had not been for the Xia family's assistance and the Little Princess' constant company by his side, he would never have been able to endure the past six years.

## Chapter 789: Give Me An Explanation (5)

---

Hate?

Mo Shangfei shook his head. He had never hated Xia Ruoyun. No matter what, Xia Ruoyun was his maternal older cousin's sister and had treated him very well. Even though everyone in the secular world accused her of causing the destruction of the Mo family, he has only ever been in pursuit of the truth over the past few years!

Hearsay may be deceiving but seeing was believing. He would not believe it unless he saw it with his own eyes.

"Mo Shangfei, do you still fancy yourself as the direct descendant of the Mo family?" Qi Haoran noticed Mo Shangfei's silence and sneered again, "The Mo family is finished. Even if the Xia family had kindly taken you in, you're nothing more than Xia Chuxue's bodyguard now. A little bodyguard like you would dare steal my Princess away. You've certainly got lofty ambitions and are marked for death! If Xia Ruoyun's mother was still around that year, you might still be considered a kindred relative of the Xia family. Now, do you really think that you can establish some sort of connection with the Xia family?"

Mo Shangfei clenched his fists tightly. The events which had happened that year would forever be a source of agony in his heart! He did not know who was behind the Mo family's destruction and if he knew, he would gather all his power and avenge his family!

"Qi Haoran!"

The Little Princess was incensed and she glared at Qi Haoran angrily, "I'm warning you, you're not allowed to harm Big Brother Mo. If Older Sister Ruoyun were still here, knowing her talents, she must be even more powerful now. Would you still dare to treat the Mo family members in this manner?"

"That's too bad, that human disaster is dead." Qi Haoran sneered, "Even if she's not dead, she was the cause of the annihilation of the Mo family and her own mother's death. She should still be drowned to death by the spit of the world. Are you unaware of what the secular world has been whispering about her? She's a cruel and unscrupulous thing, a thankless wretch! The Mo family favored her so much that year and she? She behaved like an ostrich out of fear of the cultivator who was responsible for destroying the Mo family. She didn't even have the guts to attend old Master Mo's funeral. Honestly, at this point, I admire the father and daughter, Xia Ming and Xia Chuxue even more. Six years ago, Xia Ming had kept watch beside old Master Mo's coffin for a hundred days and Xia Chuxue had cried so bitterly during the funeral out of sorrow that she fainted. As the direct maternal granddaughter of old Master Mo, what had Xia Ruoyun been doing instead? She was so cowardly and afraid. If that's not a thankless wretch, then what is?"

"Qi Haoran, you shut your mouth!" The Little Princess' entire body was trembling. Her shining eyes were now spitting raging flames, "Sister Ruoyun is not that kind of a person. She must have had hidden troubles that she could not speak of at the time and now she's no longer here! I won't allow you to slander her!"

Just as the Little Princess spoke, Mo Shagngfei charged towards Qi Haoran like the sharp blade of a sword.

However, though he had substantial talent, he was no match for Qi Haoran who was ten years older than he.

Qi Haoran laughed disdainfully and placed his fan in front of him, blocking the attack. He then stopped Mo Shangfei's fist as well and sent a wave of energy through his fan. Subsequently, Mo Shangfei's body was sent stumbling back with a loud bang. His arm became a little numb.

"Big Brother Mo," The Little Princess' heart clenched. She hurried towards Mo Shangfei and spoke with worry in her eyes,

"Big Brother Mo, are you alright? Go to the Xia family and get help, I can deal with him."

Mo Shangfei shook his head, "No, I can't leave you here. I'm going to take you away today, I won't let you marry this scum!"

"Haha, Mo Shangfei, you're really thinking of taking the Little Princess away? Have you thought of the consequences?" Qi Haoran burst into laughter and swept his contemptuous gaze towards Mo Shangfei's handsome face, "So what if the Xia family is backed by Supreme Jin? My grandfather has already broken through to the rank of a Martial Supreme. With the addition of His Royal Majesty of the Drifting Wind Country, why should we need to fear Supreme Jin? Besides, I don't think the Xia family is going to make an enemy of me for the sake of a puny bodyguard like you."



## Chapter 790: An Old Friend (1)

---

The Little Princess was beginning to feel nervous and she stared worriedly at Mo Shangfei as she bit her lip, "Big Brother Mo, the Xia family will definitely help us, right?"

Mo Shangfei smiled bitterly as he gazed at the Little Princess' sparkling eyes.

All these years, the Xia family had willingly taken him in and he was very thankful for that. After all, the enemy who was responsible for exterminating the Mo family was still at large. If that person was to find out that the Xia family had taken him, a surviving member of the Mo family, under their protection, it would also bring disaster upon the Xia family.

Even so, the Xia family had ignored the peril and kept him by their side.

It does not matter if his position in the Xia family was only as Xia Chuxue's bodyguard! Besides, the Xia family had already provoked a powerful enemy for his sake so why should they provoke another? Hence, deep in Mo Shangfei's heart, he knew that there was no use in asking the Xia family's help for this.

"Mo Shangfei, you've entangled yourself with the Little Princess. You will not be spared!"

A wave of cold light shot across Qi Haoran's eyes. With a forceful wave of his fan, numerous rays of swift and fierce light suddenly pierced through the sky before shooting towards Mo Shangfei's chest.

"Big Brother Mo, watch out!"

The Little Princess' face immediately drained of color. In a flash, she had thrown her body in front of Mo Shangfei and her eyes were full of stubbornness.

Ever since the day she had promised herself to Big Brother Mo, he

has become the most important person in the world to her. She would willingly give her life up to protect him from harm's way.

However, at that moment, Mo Shangfei embraced the Little Princess tightly before quickly turning around and exposing his back to the silvery rays of light. He firmly protected the young woman in his arms; his eyes were filled with determination and deep love.

Boom!

Suddenly, a powerful gust of wind rushed in from the side and the silvery light was deflected, charging towards Qi Haoran instead.

Qi Haoran's expression changed greatly. He quickly hid behind an old tree and the silvery light rushed towards it as well. The originally sturdy old tree suddenly crashed to the ground in a cloud of dust.

"Cough, cough."

Qi Haoran coughed drily as his eyes glared menacingly at the woman in green who was standing behind Mo Shangfei. He gritted his teeth, "Who are you? Are you trying to butt in?"

The woman in the green robes calmly raised her eyebrows and glared coldly back at Qi Haoran's ashen face. Her voice was as clear and calm like the wind, slowly echoing throughout the dust-filled mountain range.

"You had destroyed my medicinal herbs so how do you plan on compensating me?"

"You..." Qi Haoran glared at her, "When have I ever destroyed your medicinal herbs? You're just trying to blackmail me. Out with it, how much money do you want? Give me a price and scram after I give you the money!"

Bang!

The woman's eyes flickered and a hurricane rose from beneath her feet. A wave of energy whirled towards Qi Haoran and sent him flying out of the way. It threw him away before violently slamming him on the ground.

"Damned girl, if you won't do this the easy way, then we'll do it the hard way. Do you know who I am?" Qi Haoran crawled to his feet and wiped the blood off the corner of his lips. His eyes flashed with ferocity, "Provoking me will not end well for you!"

Gu Ruoyun stared at him calmly. She then took a few steps forward.

As Qi Haoran watched her approach him, he began to feel absolutely terrified. He completely forgot his bold and grandiose words as he immediately turned around and ran far, far away!

Gu Ruoyun was mildly stunned. She then rubbed her nose exasperatedly and turned towards the two people behind her.

## Chapter 791: An Old Friend (2)

---

These two are my acquaintances. If this had purely been about those medicinal herbs, I would not have bothered to meddle! However, I can't leave them in the lurch! The destroyed medicinal herbs were only an excuse for me to step in.

"Miss, thank you for saving us."

Mo Shangfei released the Little Princess from his embrace and approached Gu Ruoyun. He joined his fists together and bowed, "I, Mo Shangfei, will return this debt one day."

"Mo Shangfei?"

Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly, "There's no need to thank me. Come to think of it, I have some connection to the Mo family."

She thought that the entire Mo family had been annihilated during that fateful year. She never expected that there would be a survivor. This means that her maternal grandfather was left with one bloodline and that no matter what, she had to protect this last remaining descendant.

Mo Shangfei was stunned and he stared in confusion at Gu Ruoyun.

"Miss, may I ask which member of the Mo family are you acquainted with?"

"Xia Ruoyun." Gu Ruoyun's eyes darkened slightly, "I was once acquainted with Xia Ruoyun of the Xia family. Perhaps it was because we have the same name despite our different surnames so we had got along very well at the time. She had also mentioned the both of you before as well."

Mo Shangfei's chest tightened instantly. He reached out to hold onto Gu Ruoyun's shoulder, even his breathing has changed.

"Miss, you knew my cousin?"

"Big Brother Mo," The Little Princess hurriedly stepped forward. She glanced at Mo Shangfei and said, "Don't get too excited, let's just ask her about Older Sister Ruoyun."

Gu Ruoyun smiled, the matter regarding her reincarnation was far too inconceivable. Hence, she had no way of explaining her actual identity. If she wanted to get close to these two, the best way was to pose as Xia Ruoyun's friend.

"This... I'm sorry."

Mo Shangfei realized that he had behaved too impulsively. He quickly took his hand off her shoulder and said apologetically, "I only wanted to get some information about my cousin and I became too excited. Miss, would you happen to know the truth behind my cousin's demise? Not too long ago, the Xia family discovered that the person who had caused my cousin's death was the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian. I don't know if this is true but my cousin was the daughter of the Xia family so their information must be true."

Gu Ruoyun was shaken. The Xia family is actually telling the public that my Master was the one behind my murder?

In my past life, only Supreme Jin and the Xia family knew that the Holy Doctor was my Master! Also, the person responsible for the Mo family's annihilation as well as my mother and my little brother's death is Xia Ming!

Now, he wants to frame my Master for this as well?

Gu Ruoyun laughed icily at the thought but she soon regained her calm. She looked at Mo Shangfei with eyes filled with surprise.

"Why do you believe that it was the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian who had killed your cousin? Wasn't the Holy Doctor her master? Why would he have wanted to harm her?"

At that time, she had her reasons for not disclosing her actual relationship with the Holy Doctor. The Xia family had only

managed to find out about this after they had eavesdropped on her conversation with the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian. Thus, the rest of East Peak Mainland should never have found out about the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian's only disciple.

However, since her reincarnation, it no longer mattered if anyone else were to know about it now.

"What? Miss, what did you just say? The Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian was my cousin's Master?" Mo Shangfei's expression changed as he shook his head in disbelief, "That's impossible, how could this be? Xia Ming clearly said that he had made a thorough investigation and found out that the powerful cultivator whom my cousin had provoked was the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian. How could that guy possibly be her master?"

## Chapter 792: An Old Friend (3)

---

At this moment, Mo Shangfei suddenly remembered something.

His cousin had once mentioned to him that there were two people that she admired the most in this world.

One was the Grand Lord of Red Lotus Territory, the other... Was the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian!

Since that was the case, why would my cousin have provoked him?

Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly as she saw Mo Shangfei's shifting expression.

She knew that Mo Shangfei trusts the Xia family very much so she could not reveal outright that it was the Xia family who had murdered her. She could only gradually make Mo Shangfei's suspicions grow! Clearly, he has now developed a little bit of doubt towards the Xia family.

"Little Princess, I'd like to return to the Xia family home."

Mo Shangfei turned towards the Little Princess and looked at her remorsefully, "I need to find out the truth and avenge my dead relatives! I need to know if it was really Bai Zhongtian who had killed my cousin. If not, why had the Xia family framed him? Please forgive me, I can't leave with you now. I will find a safe place for you and you can wait for me there, alright? Once I find out the truth, I'll go look for you there."

The Little Princess bit her lips and shook her head. Her bright eyes were filled with resolution, "Big Brother Mo, I'll come with you. If I'm not around, Qi Haoran and his grandfather will certainly cause trouble for you. Besides, Older Sister Ruoyun had treated me so well in the past, I'd like to know who her murderer was as well."

Gu Ruoyun smiled as she observed the Little Princess' stubborn

little face.

It has been six years.

This little girl who had loved following me around and running wildly in the past has grown up as well. However, that stubborn nature of hers has never changed. Once she has made a decision, no one can sway her from her choice.

"I'm sorry, Little Princess. I've gone back on my promise."

Mo Shangfei's entire face was riddled with guilt. In this life, the person I've wronged the most is the Little Princess.

"It's fine. As long as I refuse, can my Imperial Father really force me into marriage?"

As she spoke, the Little Princess' gaze slowly darkened and she smiled bitterly, "If it wasn't for my elder brother, the Crown Prince's worsening condition, that old fart would not be using the treatment for the Imperial Crown Prince illness as a threat to force me into marrying Qi Haoran."

"Wait!"

Gu Ruoyun suddenly interrupted the Little Princess' words, "You're saying that the Crown Prince of Drifting Wind Country is sick?"

The Little Princess nodded as her vision slowly clouded over.

Imperial Father may indulge and shower me with love but when compared with the Crown Prince, that love doesn't really count for much.

"Perhaps I can cure him."

Gu Ruoyun's eyes darted back and forth as she considered this. She then curled the corners of her lips.

"What?"

Mo Shangfei and the Little Princess were both shocked. They



turned their attention towards Gu Ruoyun and asked agitatedly, "Is that true?"

Gu Ruoyun smiled, "Did you forget? I was friends with Xia Ruoyun so I've met the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian before. I've also studied under his tutelage for a period of time. Perhaps I could help you out."

The Little Princess' eyes sparkled. If this young lady is able to successfully cure the Crown Prince, I won't have to marry Qi Haoran.

"Miss, when can we go to save the Crown Prince?"

"Once I go to Drifting Wind Country." Gu Ruoyun's eyes flashed, "However, I need to make another trip first. You two can follow later. By then, I'll go to the Xia family home to visit Mo Shangfei."

"Alright."

The Little Princess nodded. This is our only chance. No matter what, I won't give up.

Gu Ruoyun said nothing more and turned around to head towards Drifting Wind Country. After all, the Little Princess and Mo Shangfei were too slow. She needed to survey the situation in Drifting Wind Country first.

## Chapter 793: An Old Friend (4)

---

In a teahouse in Drifting Wind Country, a woman in green robes was sitting in a corner, quietly listening in on the conversations around her.

"Did you hear? Supreme Jin has been searching for the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian's whereabouts. I don't know what the Holy Doctor could have possibly done to offend Supreme Jin of Gold Country."

"Tsk, tsk. You don't know this but I've heard about it long ago. It seems that the enemy who was responsible for Xia Ruoyun of the Xia family's death was the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian! Xia Ruoyun's father, Xia Ming, has expended a lot of effort in investigating this. I also heard that Supreme Jin and Xia Ruoyun had a pretty good relationship. So, of course, he wouldn't possibly spare her murderer."

"What? Are you saying that the person who had destroyed Xia Ruoyun's maternal family was the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian? This... This can't be possible. Why should the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian do such a thing?"

The crowd sighed incessantly. Even so, no one had noticed the girl in the green robes who was sitting in the corner.

Gu Ruoyun's eyebrows were knitted together tightly as her eyes flashed with deep meaning. After a long pause, she relaxed her brows and a cold smile appeared on the corner of her lips, "Xia Ming, Xia Chuxue. Years ago, you had destroyed my maternal grandfather's entire family for the sake of acquiring the Ancient Divine Pagoda which I had rightfully inherited from Grandfather. You two had also murdered my mother and my little brother. Now, you want to use this to frame my old master! Unfortunately, you'll never guess that not only have I been reincarnated, I've also... Returned."

However, she was no longer Xia Ruoyun of the Xia family. She was now Gu Ruoyun!

Just then, a voice boomed through the tearoom, what it said caused Gu Ruoyun to shudder. Soon after that, a murderous intent erupted from her being, making her lucid and elegant features grow increasingly icy.

"Hurry, look. It's Xia Chuxue of the Xia family!"

"Tsk, tsk. Xia Chuxue sure is beautiful. No wonder Lu Chen is dead-set on her. I've even heard that Supreme Jin of Gold Country also puts her in high regard!"

"I reckon that that's highly possible since it goes without saying that Xia Chuxue is the number one beauty in Drifting Wind Country as well as an extremely talented person. She would certainly make a good match for Supreme Jin! However, I've heard that Supreme Jin of Gold Country had taken a liking to Xia Chuxue but she had rejected him. It makes sense that an unselfish and unconditional woman like Xia Chuxue would not give herself away despite Supreme Jin's handsome face, incomparable power, and great influence?

"By the way, you may not know this but that fallen Xia Ruoyun of the Xia family was exactly that kind of woman. I heard that she and Supreme Jin had crossed paths once and she had taken a liking to Supreme Jin's looks and power so she had given herself to him. Otherwise, why do you think that Supreme Jin would send the Xia family so much help in the beginning? Now, he wants to avenge Xia Ruoyun! However, later on, Supreme Jin had met Xia Chuxue and he was attracted to her unselfish and unconditional nature and then fell in love with her. Now, his intention of avenging Xia Ruoyun was partially due to Xia Chuxue's request."

"Xia Chuxue certainly is the perfect woman. She's so loyal and devoted to her older sister. Also, I've heard that Lu Chen had fallen for Xia Chuxue first but due to Xia Ruoyun's machinations, he had

become Xia Ruoyun's husband-to-be..."

Just as the crowd was engrossed in their discussion, Xia Chuxue, who was dressed in white and looked as simple and elegant as a pure lotus flower, slowly stepped into the teahouse. However, when she entered the tearoom, she paused in her steps. Her beautiful hair fluttered gently in the light breeze. Her voice then silenced the noisy tearoom.

"Xia Ruoyun was my older sister. No matter how many sins she has committed, she was still connected to me by blood. I won't allow anyone to gossip about her! If I hear any more of these absurd remarks, don't blame me for being my lack of courtesy!"

## Chapter 794: An Old Friend (5)

---

After Xia Chuxue had spoken, she retracted her gaze and turned towards a group of escorts waiting for her. She then headed to the second floor and her white robes soon disappeared from view.

After she had left, the initially silent tearoom burst into a discussion once again. This time, they had lowered their voices somewhat.

"Xia Ruoyun sure is lucky to have a little sister like that! Furthermore, this sister is far too loyal. She cried so much during Xia Ruoyun's maternal grandfather and mother's funeral that she had passed out. In comparison, that cruel and unscrupulous Xia Ruoyun was so cowardly that she never even showed her face at her own relatives' funeral. It was a good thing that she had ended up dead. An ungrateful wretch like her does not deserve to be left alive!"

Gu Ruoyun listened to the discussion and her originally tumultuous and raging heart slowly calmed down.

In her past life, her inability to attend her relatives' funeral was indeed her greatest regret.

However, at the time, she was being hunted by Xia Ming so how could she have given herself up so stupidly?

As for Xia Chuxue...

She really was Xia Ming's daughter. She has fully inherited all his traits.

She has now become a devoted and loyal woman!

Initially, between her birth mother and Xia Ruoyun's birth mother, one had the position as a concubine while the other was the matron of the house! She, as the daughter of the concubine, had cried until she had fainted at the matron of the house's funeral! Yet the trueborn daughter, Xia Ruoyun, had hidden away

like a cowardly ostrich, not even daring to show her face.

With such a clear-cut difference, the people in this tearoom would have naturally arrived at this conclusion.

However, no one knows that Xia Ruoyun's mother had not been buried in their ancestral grave! She had instead been tossed into an unmarked grave by Xia Ming and his daughter, not even her bones could be found now!

Gu Ruoyun took a deep breath in order to suppress her impulses. Her gaze turned towards the second floor and she happened to notice a familiar figure.

Is that him?

She was momentarily stunned before she frowned.

What was Supreme Jin doing here? Could it be... That the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian is in Drifting Wind Country?

"Big Brother Jin."

Xia Chuxue had just entered the room when she saw the handsome man who had been looking down at the street below from the window. An absent-minded light flashed in her eyes as she said, "Big Brother Jin, you're here?"

"Mm."

Supreme Jin nodded as he furrowed his grave and stern brows. His thoughts were shielded from the world.

For a moment, the atmosphere was rather awkward.

Xia Chuxue fell silent for a while and was just about to speak as she was cut off by the man's icy tone.

"I heard what they were saying downstairs." Supreme Jin slowly lifted his head. His golden eyes flashed with a cold light but he continued to stare out the window, "Who was the one who had spread that?"

"What?"

Xia Chuxue was momentarily dazed as she looked at the man's handsome visage in astonishment.

"When they said that Xia Ruoyun had seduced me and that I'm in love with you!"

Supreme Jin finally turned to look at Xia Chuxue.

She does not know why but when she looked straight into the man's golden eyes, her heart trembled violently and a splash of endless cold energy leaped from her toes into her chest.

"I want to know who was it who had started these whispers!"

Xia Chuxue looked very pitiful as she replied, "Big Brother Jin, I don't know who had started those rumors. However, you should also have heard me chastising them and telling them not to believe in these lies. You, Big Brother Jin, and I both know what kind of a person my older sister really was."

Supreme Jin's golden eyes darkened. After a while, under this stifling atmosphere, he steadily replied, "Xia Chuxue, I'm helping the Xia family for Yun'er's sake! If it wasn't for her, whether the Xia family lives or dies is none of my business!"

# Chapter 795: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family (1)

---

Xia Chuxue's heart trembled. She bit her lips hard and raised her head to look at Supreme Jin's handsome face.

"Big Brother Jin, I'd like to know... Did you have feelings for my sister?"

Feelings?

Supreme Jin smiled.

This woman will never understand that there's another kind of feeling that goes beyond that of a man and a woman's romantic affairs.

That woman was a person who fully deserved my trust! Even if I were to expose all of my flaws before her, I believe that she would never strike me with her blade!

This kind of trust surpasses everything else!

In this world, only she could make me feel so calm and only she deserves my trust.

"You're asking a little too much." Supreme Jin's expression reverted to his originally grave and stern look. His golden eyes retained the domineering air of a sovereign. "You only need to remember that the Xia family should stick to carrying out your own duties! If anything happens, I will come to your aid but don't ask me for anything more!"

Xia Chuxue smiled bitterly, "I understand, Big Brother Jin. I've invited you here because I heard that you've rushed to Drifting Wind Country. Was that because the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian is here?"

Supreme Jin looked at Xia Chuxue before nodding, "That's right! I've received news of his whereabouts in Drifting Wind Country.



Leave this matter to this Supreme One. I won't spare Yun'er's murderer!"

Boom!

Just as he said the last syllable, a powerful force erupted from the man's being. His golden robes fluttered, setting off the man's handsome features and giving him an even more noble and domineering air.

Xia Chuxue held back the glint in her eyes. She looked at the domineering man and spoke in a serious yet honest manner, "Big Brother Jin, Big Sister's revenge is mine as well! All these years, I've spared no expense in uncovering her murderer. No matter what, I won't let him get away with it! I don't think Big Sister would be at peace until we've sent him to hell!"

She had indeed made painstaking efforts!

She had made painstaking efforts to convince Supreme Jin that it was the Holy Doctor Bai Zhongtian who had murdered Xia Ruoyun.

The joke of it all was even though Supreme Jin was the head of the state of a country, he had still fallen for her schemes.

"Alright."

Seeing the sincerity on Xia Chuxue's face, Supreme Jin's handsome face finally softened, "No matter where Bai Zhongtian is hiding, I will find him! I'll be staying in a guest house during this period of time. If you have any news, you may find me at the guest house."

"I understand. Big Brother Jin, I have some matters to attend to. I'll take my leave now."

Xia Chuxue smiled but when she turned around, the smile on her face disappeared and was replaced by a menacing sneer.

Xia Ruoyun! I really don't know what abilities you possess to

have so many people seeking to avenge you after your death! Unfortunately, no matter how hard the world tries to investigate this, they'll never know that the real people behind your death, was the Xia family!

After all, the Xia family has always displayed good treatment towards you in public. Father is so loving so who would even suspect us?

Xia Chuxue pushed the door open and walked down to the ground floor. Once she re-entered the lounge, she felt as if she was being watched by a pair of clear and cold eyes. That feeling was all too familiar and caused her heart to shiver continuously.

She tried to find out where the line of sight had come from but she realized that she could not detect its origin at all.

"Perhaps I've been too tired lately, my senses may be out of commission."

She shook her head and walked out of the tearoom.

The moment she stepped out of the tearoom, Gu Ruoyun raised her head once again. Her clear and cold gaze fixed resolutely on the direction where that woman had just departed. A wave of murderous intent flashed across her eyes.

## Chapter 796: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family (2)

---

Gu Ruoyun was deep in thought when the door of the compartment on the second floor opened once again.

Following that, she saw a man slowly walking down from the second floor. He was dressed in golden robes and had furrowed, stern brows. He seemed to sense a pair of eyes watching him and followed the trail. In an instant, a pair of clear, cold eyes crashed right into his golden eyes. He narrowed his eyes instantly and his heart feels as if it was pounding furiously.

"It's her?"

Supreme Jin was shaken. His golden eyes flashed with a dark and gloomy confusion. He then slowly approached the woman in green who was sipping on her tea in the tearoom.

"Can I help you?"

Gu Ruoyun slowly put her teacup down and smiled serenely. She raised her eyes to look at the man in golden robes in front of her.

Supreme Jin's eyes tensed and his expression remained grave and stern. His voice remained cool as he asked, "Back in the snowy forest, this Supreme One had wanted to ask you something; have we met before?"

Gu Ruoyun smiled gently. Supreme Jin did not know why but when he saw her smile, he felt as if a heavy weight had pounded into his heart.

How alike!

Too alike!

Her smile looks too much like Yun'er's. If it wasn't for the fact that I don't recognize her face at all, I would have suspected that this woman is actually Yun'er.

"My apologies, we don't know each other."

Gu Ruoyun mildly lowered her eyes, concealing her emotions and steadying the excitement in her heart. She then slowly looked up again and smiled lightly, "Even so, I would like to advise you that sometimes what you've heard might not be the truth. Perhaps the people you trust might be your true enemy."

Supreme Jin faltered for a bit before frowning.

What is she trying to say?

Is she implying that the people I trust are my true enemies? Is she referring to the Xia family?

Supreme Jin intended to question her further but after making her statement, Gu Ruoyun had lowered her head and quietly sipped on her tea, no longer looking at him. Seeing how she does not seem to want to talk anymore, he joined his fists together, bowed and left.

When the man in golden robes had left from the tearoom, the woman in green who had been sipping on her tea, slowly raised her head again. She drifted into deep thoughts as she watched his exit.

Suddenly, a boy in purple robes filled the space in front of Gu Ruoyun's seat.

The little boy was dressed in reddish-purple robes with a purple flame in the space between his brows. His fair and adorable face held a playful smile. He had no trace of politeness at all as he reached out and grabbed Gu Ruoyun's teacup, finishing her tea.

"You're not going to tell him?" Xiao Zixie's pupils darted back and forth. His thoughts were unreadable.

"I can't do that yet."

Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "Besides, he wouldn't believe me even if I had told him."

Xiao Zixie pursed his lips, deep in thought. At that moment, a

childish voice rang out from the side.

"Older Brother Lu Chen, this little doll is very pretty. Will you buy it for me?"

Lu Chen?

Gu Ruoyun's entire being turned frosty when she heard that name. Her dark, bleak eyes immediately filled with a deep, whirling, murderous intent.

Nevertheless, she suppressed it all in the end and betrayed no emotion on her lucid and elegant face. She did not even spare a single look at the two people who had just entered the tearoom.

The person who had spoken was a little girl next to Lu Chen.

She noticed that the little girl was around five years old. Her fair and flawless little face was extremely adorable. Her large, sparkling and translucent eyes shone with intelligence and her long lashes were like cattail-leaf fans.

# Chapter 797: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family (3)

---

However...

The cute little doll had raised her snow-white chin and was staring arrogantly at the purple-eyed boy who was sitting on the chair.

She was looking at Xiao Zixie as if he was not a living and breathing person but a toy which had caught her attention.

"It's the Second Lady of the Xia family."

"The Second Lady of the Xia family is not like Xia Chuxue. Xia Chuxue is kind and graceful while this Second Lady is haughty and willful. Still, she's only a child. It's normal for her to be a little willful but these two are in for it now."

"I don't know whose family's son the little boy in purple is, he's indeed very beautiful. Regardless of his identity, he's no match for the Xia family who is protected by Supreme Jin."

Upon seeing this, everyone in the tearoom could not help but shake their head and sigh. However, no one wanted to step in and speak up for Gu Ruoyun and her little group.

The Second Lady of the Xia family?

Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow. If I remember correctly, the Second Lady of the Xia family should be Xia Chuxue!

However, based on the current situation, my name should have been taken off the books since I'm dead! Now, Xia Chuxue has become the Eldest Lady of the Xia family and this girl, if my guess is right, should be Xia Chuxue's biological little sister.

"This..." Lu Chen glanced at Xia Chuling in embarrassment yet his cold eyes could not mask his indulgence. He thought for a while and turned to the girl in the green robes who had been sitting

silently a few tables away from them the entire time. He said, "Miss, may I discuss something with you?"

Gu Ruoyun put her teacup down and replied indifferently, "What is it?"

"I'd like to ask your younger brother to accompany my younger sister for a few days. What do you think, Miss?"

Lu Chen curled the corners of his lips. His grave and stern face displayed what he thought was a warm smile. To him, no woman could resist his smile!

Hearing this, the woman in green finally raised her head.

At that instant, Lu Chen felt as if something had landed heavily on his heart.

I never knew that someone in this world could have eyes so similar to hers — just as bleak and reserved, carrying a sense of apathy that shows how little she cared about the things of the world.

Lu Chen's expression changed twice. He could not help but stumble back.

Xia Ruoyun is dead!

Even if someone else looked like her, it can't possibly be her!

If that's the case, what's there for me to be afraid of?

Lu Chen took a deep breath at the thought. He calmed himself and awaited Gu Ruoyun's reply with a smile.

"My apologies."

Gu Ruoyun took note of the change in the man's expression and replied.

"I refuse."

Lu Chen's expression sank slightly, "Miss, I'm willing to pay and hire him for his services. You need only name your price."

Xiao Zixie did not seem to hear him. He grabbed a pastry on the table and placed in his mouth. His young, tender, and adorable little face was full of smiles. However, if Lu Chen had glanced at him at this very moment, he would certainly notice the fleeting flash of murderous intent in his purple eyes.

"Hire him?" Gu Ruoyun smiled. "I'm afraid you wouldn't be able to afford the bill!"

She was speaking the truth.

Xiao Zixie may still be at his childhood stage but as the Ancient Divine Phoenix and the fact that he was already at the rank of a Martial Supreme, there was probably no one in existence who could actually afford to hire him!

"Miss, name your price. No matter the amount, I, Lu Chen, will give it to you!"

Lu Chen's expression was now an ugly shade. He had thought that by using his good looks and charm, this woman would fall for him and gift the little boy to Xia Chuling. He never expected her to spout such conceited nonsense.



## Chapter 798: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family (4)

---

She said that I won't be able to afford the price of hiring a five-year-old boy? That's the greatest joke in the world!

"You're sure that you want to haggle with me?" Gu Ruoyun raised an eyebrow with a half smile in her clear and cold eyes.

"That's right!" Lu Chen laughed coldly, "As long as you negotiate a price, I can match it!"

"Fine!"

Gu Ruoyun smiled as she stroked the teacup on the table with one finger. The meaning behind her smile was unreadable.

"Use your life to exchange for one minute of his time!"

This means that Lu Chen's life was only worth one minute of Xiao Zixie's time.

"What did you just say?"

Lu Chen's face has turned ashen and a fiery rage whirled within his being. He glared at Gu Ruoyun coldly, "My life is priceless yet you humiliate me by saying I can only exchange it for one minute of his time. Don't you think you're being a bit rude?"

Xiao Zixie rolled his eyes and swept a cold smile towards Lu Chen.

Forget about exchanging his life for a minute of my time. I won't exchange my time even if he was to give me ten of his lives!

"I've changed my mind," Gu Ruoyun smiled serenely, "Now I want the lives of every member of the Xia family! If you can give me their lives, I will give in exchange to you one minute of his time!"

The expression on Lu Chen's face had turned increasingly ugly.

He clenched his fist to stop the raging fire from within him.

"Miss, he's a five-year-old child. He should be worth twenty gold pieces at most! I'm willing to give you twenty gold pieces for you to sell him to me for a month! I'll give him back to you after one month. Of course, during the course of this month, he will belong completely to the Xia family. You won't be allowed to see him!"

Gu Ruoyun smiled icily, "Do you not understand me?"

"What?"

"I've told you, only if you trade all the lives of the Xia family members would you receive one minute of his time! As for a month... Do you really think that you can pay that price?"

Instantly, the entire tearoom became silent.

When they saw the extremely ugly look on Lu Chen's face, a few kind souls could not help but advise her, "Miss, Lu Chen is the future son-in-law of the Xia family. Also, the Xia family is protected by Supreme Jin. Since Second Lady Xia has taken a liking to your little brother, perhaps you could sell him to her for a month temporarily."

"Don't worry, Second Lady Xia isn't so bad. She won't do anything to your little brother. Besides, it's only for a month. Why risk offending the Xia family?"

Xiao Zixie was becoming impatient as the chatter buzzed in his ears. His impish and adorable little face had turned extremely ashen. Suddenly, Xia Chuling, who has yet to understand tact, reached out to grab Xiao Zixie. He immediately exploded.

"Go away!"

Bang!

Xiao Zixie waved his hand and landed a fierce slap on Xia Chuling's face. That one slap sent her body flying out of the way before she slammed against the door frame. The shape of a palm

and five fingers was now branded into her fair little face.

Xia Chuling was stunned. Everyone else was unable to regain their senses too. When the sting from that scorching slap finally hit her, Xia Chuling burst into tears.

"I want to go home and tell my daddy and mother. You hit me and I want my daddy to avenge me. Waaah!"

Lu Chen clenched his fist and his expression was ashen. After all, he was the one who had accompanied Xia Chuling out of the house. If she ends up being upset, how was he going to explain this to the Xia family when he returned?

"Miss, your little brother has raised his hand to harm a person as well. Don't you plan on giving us justification?"

"Justification?" Gu Ruoyun smiled icily, "What justification? His actions were out of defense! If someone didn't forcefully try to drag him away, he would not have raised his hand!"

## Chapter 799: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family (5)

---

Lu Chen looked very gloomy indeed as he replied frostily, "It looks like the children of your family are not properly brought up at all! You would even hit a person without provocation and look so nonchalant about it. I really don't know what kind of parent could have brought up a pair of siblings like you two."

Gu Ruoyun laughed scornfully. She swept her clear, cold gaze towards Lu Chen's face and slowly curled the corners of her lips.

"That's right, we're not well brought up in our family, unlike the Xia family's impressive upbringing! You would even think of snatching a boy in public at such a young age! The Master of the Xia family... Has certainly brought up a good daughter."

Isn't that right?

Accusing others of being uneducated when they had been acting in defense.

In contrast, Second Lady Xia had taken a liking to this little boy but after being rejected, she had still tried to snatch him away. What a great upbringing she's been given!

Lu Chen's expression turned even gloomier as he seemed to sense the mocking stares from the crowd, "Miss, I hope you won't regret your actions today! Ling'er, let's go."

As he spoke, Lu Chen stepped in front of Xia Chuling. He then bent down and carried her up.

"I don't want to go!"

Xia Chuling began to struggle incessantly in Lu Chen's arms as she wailed sulkily, "Brother Lu Chen, I want that boy, I want him to play with me. Snatch him back for me, please?"

"Clever Ling'er," Lu Chen stroked Xia Chuling's hair as his eyes

filled with indulgence and warmth, "Don't worry, he will be yours! When the time comes, no one will dare to stop you even if you want to make him your servant."

The Xia family now had Supreme Jin's support, who would dare to even oppose them?

Ling'er had simply taken a liking to a little doll, shouldn't that be an easy matter? In Lu Chen's opinion, the Xia family as they were now could have whatever they want and no one else would dare to snatch that away! With a powerful ally like Supreme Jin, no one would dare to make an enemy of them!

Besides, the world is still unaware of the Vermillion Bird hidden in the Xia family. Even if they had tricked the spiritual beast into joining the family, if the Xia family was ever in danger, the powers that be cannot ignore making an enemy of Supreme Jin and the Divine Spiritual Beast.

It's all because that stupid Vermillion Bird wants the Xia family to help him find his companions.

Xiao Zixie frowned. His purple eyes glared icily at Lu Chen as he left. A murderous intent flickered in his eyes and he said, "I want to kill them."

"Don't worry," Gu Ruoyun nodded gently and smiled, "That day won't be too far off now."

Xia Ming, Lu Chen, and... Xia Chuxue...

I wonder if you're all prepared?

"Xiao Zixie, our current top priorities are to find my Master and pave the way for Yu'er to make an entrance. He must be present when we make our plans against the Xia family. In our past life, they had killed my mother and destroyed Maternal Grandfather's entire family. They had then dismembered Yu'er alive. Granting them an easy death will be too much of a loss on their end! I want Yu'er to personally watch those who have harmed him in his past

life as they get their just desserts!"

The reason why she had not brought Yu'er along was because he had lost an arm. On the East Peak Mainland, where treachery crawls in every corner, this was too dangerous. Hence, she had decided to arrive first and once she has the power to protect him, she would bring him over as well.

She would then let him personally exact his revenge.

Xiao Zixie fell silent, he knew that the depth of hatred Gu Ruoyun held in her heart. If she does not let it all out, it would easily affect her cultivation in the future. This time, he would stand by her in everything she chooses to do.

# Chapter 800: The First Meeting (1)

---

"So, where are we going to now?"

After he regained his senses from his deep thought, Xiao Zixie pursed his lips. Every time he thought of Lu Chen's shameless words, a fiery rage would burn from within his heart. A cold, eerie light flashed across his purple eyes, carrying a thick murderous intent.

Gu Ruoyun raised her brows before slowly rising to her feet and walked out the door. Her lips were curled into a small smile and an undetectable glint flashed in her clear, cold gaze.

She did not reply Xiao Zixie's question as she exited the tearoom and headed towards the familiar streets...

...

"Grand Lord, Ling Feng has returned!"

At this moment in the Red Lotus Territory, the man in red raised an eyebrow upon hearing his subordinate's report. His fingers remained on his teacup and he replied indifferently, "Let him in."

"Yes, Grand Lord."

The man withdrew as he spoke. Soon, a man in black robes entered the room. He joined his fists and bowed as he greeted the man in red with reverence, "Reporting to the Grand Lord, this subordinate has received some news from the First City."

"Speak!"

The man in red sipped his tea and his tone was as grim as ever.

"This subordinate has personally heard from an elder in the First City that the Young Lady has journeyed from the West Spirit Mainland and has arrived on the East Peak Mainland!"

The man in red tightened his grip on his teacup and his breathing quickened automatically.

"Is this true?"

In the entire Red Lotus Territory, only a select few know of Grand Lord Hong Lian's true identity.

That year, someone had set him up and he had nearly lost his life. Fortunately, he had a few loyal subordinates by his side. There weren't very many of them, only around ten had remained with him. However, these ten people have then followed him from the West Spirit Mainland to the East Peak Mainland and have stayed by his side through countless dangers and torment.

Ling Feng was one of them. He had expended a tremendous amount of effort in order to receive the assignment to go undercover in the First City!

"This subordinate had heard the news with his own ears. This can't be false."

The man in red's heart trembled. He tightened his grip on his teacup, took a deep breath and laughed bitterly, "All these years, I've offended quite a number of people to avoid the discovery of my identity from the West Spirit Mainland and also to protect my son and daughter from my hometown. I had concealed my identity so that aside from those b\*stards in the First City, no one else would know my origins. Ling Feng, I had asked you to go undercover in the First City because I suspect that Yu'er might have fallen into their hands. I had thought of finding Yu'er's whereabouts but I never thought that you would have discovered news of my daughter."

"It has been so many years, so many years since I've laid eyes on her. I didn't even get to name her."

The man in red gently closed his eyes as his heart throbbed with agony.

"I wonder if she hates me. By the way, Ling Feng, what did the Gu family name my daughter? I had thought of countless names for



her that year but before I could make a decision, that incident had happened. However, since she has arrived on the East Peak Mainland, I must find her no matter what!"

Hearing this, Ling Feng's mind harkened back to the name mentioned during his discussion with the elder in the First City. He said, "Gu Ruoyun!"

Shatter!

The teacup in the man in red's hand slowly slipped from his fingers. It fell to the ground and smashed into pieces. A flash of red robes then swiftly appeared in front of Ling Feng. The man in red grabbed him by the lapels and spoke with a completely different look on his face, "What did you just say? My own trueborn daughter, what's her name?"

# Table of Contents

## [Evil Emperor's Wild Consort](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 701: Depart, Kill \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 702: Depart, Kill \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 703: Depart, Kill \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 704: Depart, Kill \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 705: Lingxiao's Return \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 706: Lingxiao's Return \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 707: Lingxiao's Return \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 708: Lingxiao's Return \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 709: Lingxiao's Return \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 710: Lingxiao's Return \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 711: Lingxiao's Return \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 712: Lingxiao's Return \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 713: Lingxiao's Return \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 714: Lingxiao's Return \(10\)](#)

[Chapter 715: A Shocking Birthday! \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 716: A Shocking Birthday! \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 717: A Shocking Birthday! \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 718: A Shocking Birthday! \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 719: A Shocking Birthday! \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 720: A Shocking Birthday! \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 721: A Shocking Birthday! \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 722: A Shocking Birthday! \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 723: A Shocking Birthday! \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 724: A Shocking Birthday! \(10\)](#)

[Chapter 725: Shifting The Blame \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 726: Shifting The Blame \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 727: Shifting The Blame \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 728: Shifting The Blame \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 729: Shifting The Blame \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 730: The War Of Gods And Demons \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 731: The War Of Gods And Demons \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 732: The War Of Gods And Demons \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 733: The War Of Gods And Demons \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 734: The War Of Gods And Demons \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 735: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 736: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 737: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 738: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 739: Gu Ruoyun's Wrath \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 740: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 741: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 742: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 743: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 744: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 745: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 746: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 747: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 748: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 749: Exterminating The Immortal Realm \(10\)](#)

[Chapter 750: Zixie Returns \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 751: Zixie Returns \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 752: Zixie Returns \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 753: Zixie Returns \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 754: Zixie Returns \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 755: The End \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 756: The End \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 757: The End \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 758: The End \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 759: The End \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 760: The Man In Red \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 761: The Man In Red \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 762: The Man In Red \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 763: The Man In Red \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 764: The Man In Red \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 765: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 766: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 767: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 768: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 769: The Rage Of The Snow Spirit Wolves \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 770: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 771: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 772: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 773: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 774: The Mysterious Cloud Fruit \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 775: Supreme Jin \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 776: Supreme Jin \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 777: Supreme Jin \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 778: Supreme Jin \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 779: Supreme Jin \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 780: The Semi-Saint Dragon \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 781: The Semi-Saint Dragon \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 782: The Semi-Saint Dragon \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 783: The Semi-Saint Dragon \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 784: The Semi-Saint Dragon \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 785: Give Me An Explanation \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 786: Give Me An Explanation \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 787: Give Me An Explanation \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 788: Give Me An Explanation \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 789: Give Me An Explanation \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 790: An Old Friend \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 791: An Old Friend \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 792: An Old Friend \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 793: An Old Friend \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 794: An Old Friend \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 795: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 796: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 797: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 798: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 799: The Second Lady Of The Xia Family \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 800: The First Meeting \(1\)](#)